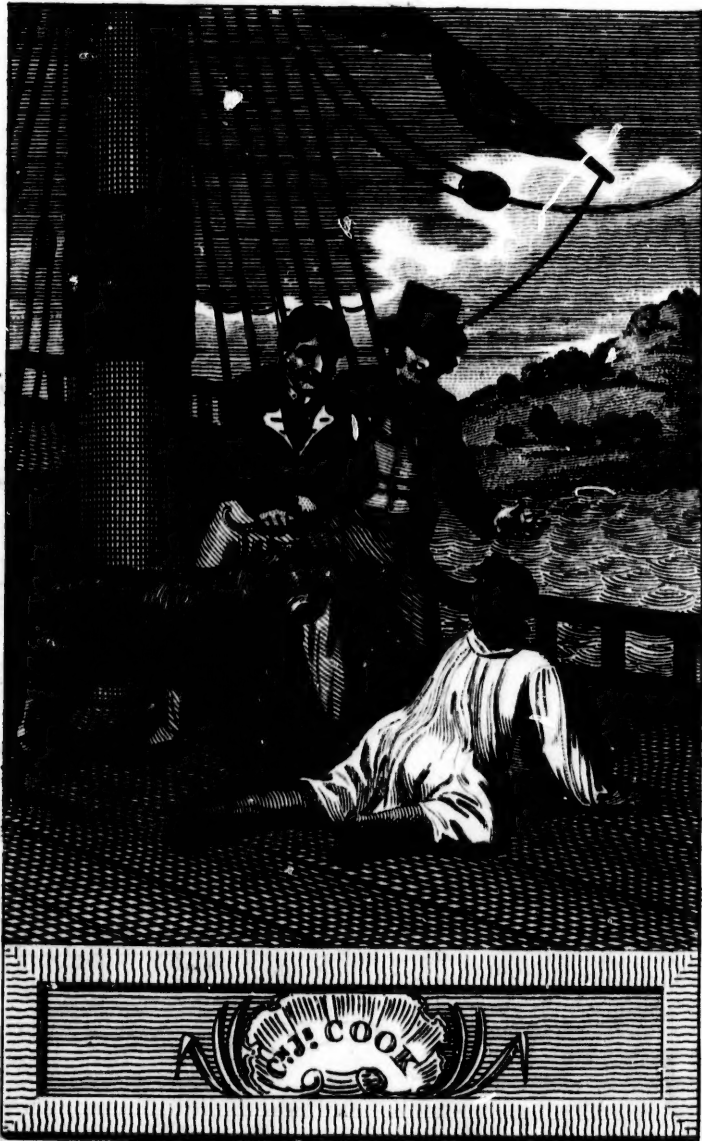
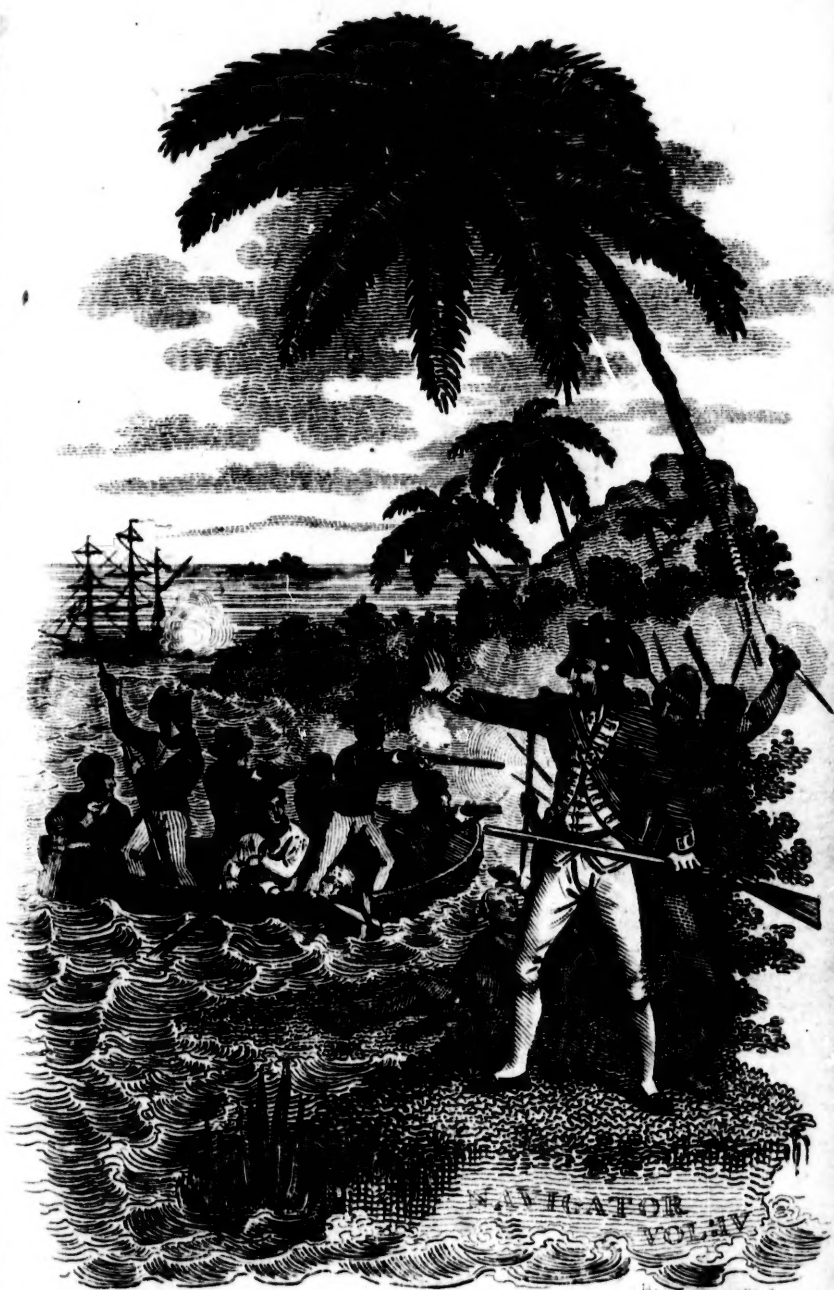


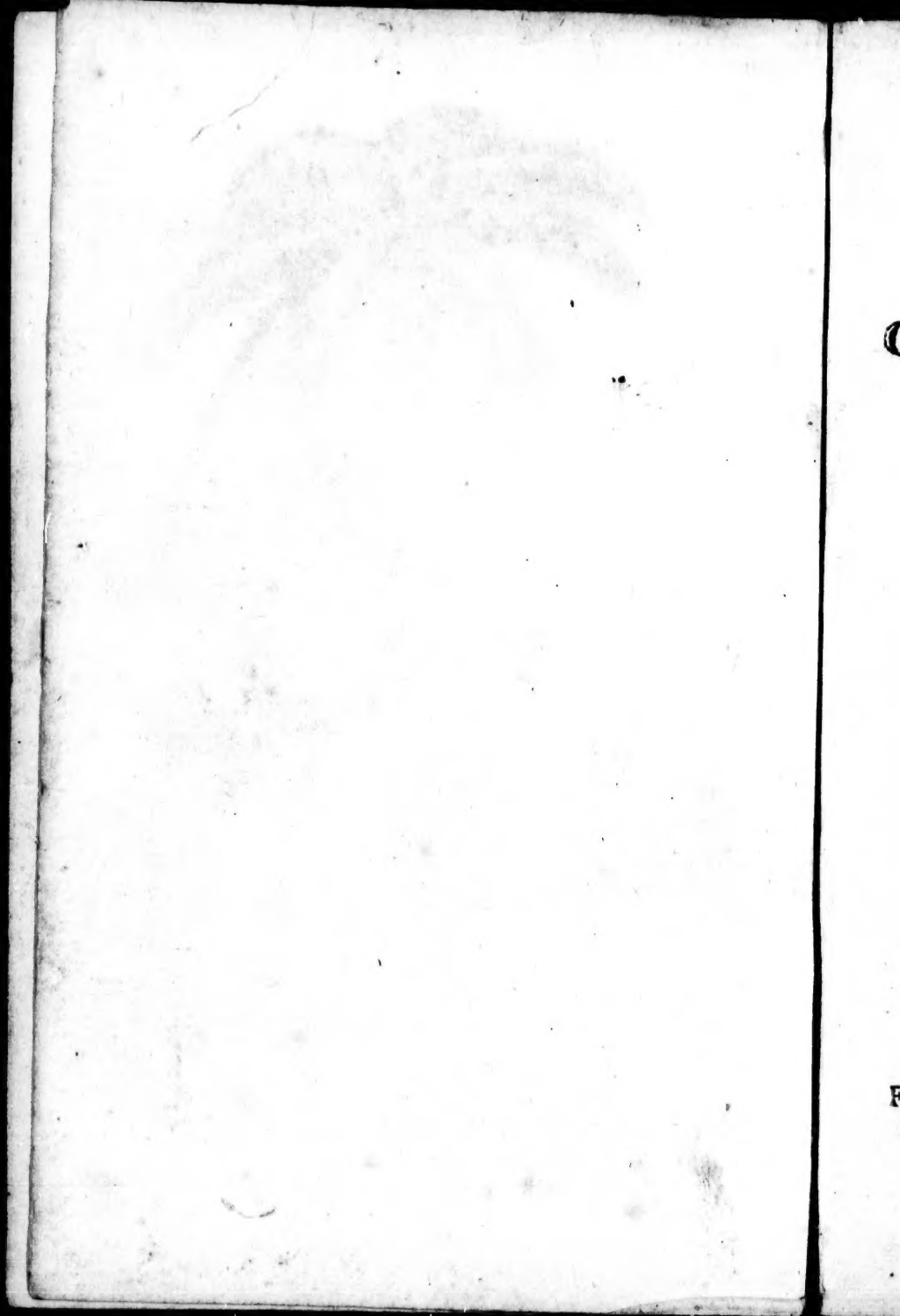


WG: del:

Hunt Sc:

Published by & for I. R. 1807.





THE
VOYAGES
OF
CAPTAIN JAMES COOK
ROUND THE WORLD:

WITH AN
ACCOUNT
OF HIS
Unfortunate Death at Owhyhee,
ONE OF THE
SANDWICH ISLANDS.

LONDON:

Printed by T. Maiden, Sherbourn-Lane,
For Ann Lemoine, White Rose Court, Coleman-Street,
And J. Roe, No. 90, Houndsditch.

Sold by all the Booksellers in
The United Kingdom.

NW
970P
C771
1st-3d
Lond.
1,807

THE
VOYAGES
OF
CAPTAIN JAMES COOK
ROUND THE WORLD.

FIRST VOYAGE.

THE deeds of great men always claim, and meet with, the approbation of the world; but when virtue is the governing principle which actuates the mind of an illustrious person, and leads him on to actions great and noble, from which honor and humanity never swerve, how truly just is the applause he receives, and how nobly disinterested are his motives, in, perhaps, risking his life, his reputation, or the loss of his dearest connections, for comparatively little else than the empty praises of court parasites, or the more frothy popularity of a fickle multitude! In whatever soil genius or merit is sown, it will burst forth, according to its strength, with as much splendor as the sun from behind a cloud: if difficulties obstruct its progress, the more furious it will burn, till it is properly cultivated, and advantageously employed. This is exemplified in the life of the following great and humane commander, who was both an honor to his profession, and an ornament to his country, and whose humble origin only reflects a greater degree of lustre on his splendid talents.

Captain Cook was born at Marton, in Cleveland, a village about four miles from Great Ayton, in Yorkshire, on the 27th of October, 1728. His father, who

lived in the humble station of a farmer's servant, married a woman in the same sphere of life with himself; and both were noted in their neighbourhood for their honesty, sobriety, and industry; and when our navigator was about two years old, his father and family removed to Great Ayton, and was appointed to superintend a considerable farm belonging to the late Thomas Scottowe, Esq. known by the name of Airyholm. As the father long continued in this trust, the son, of course, followed the same employment, as far as his tender years would admit. His early education appears to have been very slender; but at the age of thirteen we find him put under the tuition of Mr. Pullen, who taught school at Ayton, where he learned the rudiments of arithmetic and book-keeping, and is said to have shewn a remarkable facility in acquiring the science of numbers.

In the beginning of 1745, when young Cook was seventeen years old, his father bound him apprentice to William Sanderson, for four years, to learn the grocery and haberdashery business, at Snaith, a populous fishing town about ten miles from Whitby. But as he evinced a strong partiality for a maritime life, for which his predilection was probably strengthened by the situation of the place, and the company with which, it is probable, he associated, after a year and a half's servitude, on some trivial disagreement with his master, he obtained a release from his engagements, and determined to follow the bent of his inclination.

In July, 1746, he was bound apprentice to Messrs. Walker, of Whitby, for the term of three years, which he served to the full satisfaction of his masters. His first voyage was on board the ship *Freelove*, burden of about four hundred and fifty tons, chiefly employed in the coal trade from Newcastle to London.

In May, 1748, his master ordered him home to assist in rigging and fitting for sea a fine new ship, named the *Three Brothers*, of six hundred tons. This was designed to improve him in his profession, and to qualify him for a better birth, when his servitude should expire.

After two coal voyages in this vessel, she was taken into the service of government, and sent as a transport to Middleburgh, to convey some troops to Dublin. These being landed at their destination, another corps was taken on board, and brought to Liverpool. From thence the ship proceeded for Deptford, where she was paid off in April, 1749. The remaining part of the season Cook served on board her in the Norway trade.

After this being honorably released from his engagements, he entered on board a ship employed in the Baltic trade, and performed several voyages, of no great importance, during the two following years. In 1752, his old master promoted him to the rank of mate of one of his ships, called the *Friendship*, in which capacity he acted for some time, with so much credit to himself, and satisfaction to his owners, that it is said he was offered the place of captain. This, however, he declined; and fortunate was it for his country he did so.

In the spring of 1755, hostilities commenced between Great Britain and France. As press-warrants had been issued, Mr. Cook, who then lay in the river Thames, afraid of being pressed, resolved, if possible, to conceal himself; but afterwards reflecting on the difficulty of this, he adopted the resolution of entering as a volunteer in the royal navy, "having a mind," as he expressed himself, "to try his fortune in that way."

Agreeable to this design, he repaired to a house of rendezvous at Wapping, and entered on board the *Eagle*, a sixty gun ship, at that time commanded by Captain Hamer. To this ship, Captain (afterwards Sir Hugh) Palliser being appointed in October following, Cook's diligence and attention to the duties of his profession did not escape the notice of that intelligent commander, and he met with every encouragement compatible with his humble station.

By this time Cook's merit having been blazoned among his connections and friends in his native country, some of them generously interested themselves in his behalf, and procured a letter of recommendation to his Captain from Mr. Osbaldeston, member of Parliament

for Scarborough, in which it was requested he would point out in what manner they could contribute to his promotion. Captain Palliser did full justice to Cook's character, and suggested that a master's warrant might, perhaps, be procured for him, by which he would be put in a situation suited to his talents, and be enabled to reflect credit on those who honored him with their patronage.

In consequence of this, interest was made for a master's warrant, which he obtained to the *Grampus* sloop, in May, 1759; but this appointment did not take place, as the former master unexpectedly returned. In a few days, however, he was made master of the *Garland*; but here, too, he was disappointed; for, on inquiry, it was found that the ship had already sailed. At last he was appointed to the *Mercury*, which was destined for North America, under the command of Sir Charles Saunders, who, in conjunction with General Wolfe, was then engaged in the memorable siege of Quebec.

During that signal transaction, it was found necessary to obtain the soundings of the river St. Lawrence, directly opposite to the French camp at Montmorency and Beauport. As this was universally esteemed to be a dangerous and difficult service, and as Cook's sagacity and intrepidity were now well known, Captain Palliser recommended him for the undertaking; and in the choice that was made, the service was not injured. Cook executed his office in the completest manner, and to the entire satisfaction of his superiors. He did not, however, effect this without great risk. Being engaged in this pursuit for several successive nights, he was at last discovered by the enemy, who sent a number of canoes, filled with Indians, to surround him; and he had no other alternative, but to make for the Isle of Orleans, where he was so closely pursued, that he had scarcely leaped from the bow of the boat, before the Indians entered by the stern, and carried her off in triumph.

It is supposed that before this period Cook had not used a pencil, or was acquainted with the principles of

drawing; but such was the vigor of his mind, and his aptitude for the acquisition of knowledge, that he soon mastered every object to which he applied. And, notwithstanding the disadvantages under which he labored, he furnished the Admiral with as complete a draught of the channel and its soundings, as could have been furnished by the most expert surveyor in peace, and by daylight.

Soon after this, our navigator performed another service, not less important, and which redounds equally to his honor. The navigation of the river St. Lawrence is both difficult and dangerous, and was then particularly so to the English, who were strangers in that quarter. The Admiral, therefore, who had conceived a very favorable opinion of Mr. Cook's abilities, appointed him to survey the river below Quebec, which he also executed with the same diligence and ability he had displayed on the former occasion. This chart of the river, when completed, was published, with soundings and directions for safely navigating it; and so great was the accuracy observed, that it has superseded all other surveys.

After the conquest at Canada, so glorious to every person who had a share in it, Mr. Cook was appointed master of the Northumberland, under Lord Colvill, on the 2d of September, 1759. In this ship his Lordship continued the following winter as Commodore at Halifax; and Cook's conduct, in his new station, did not fail, as on former occasions, to gain him the friendship and esteem of his commander.

Sensible that he was now in the road to promotion, he shewed a laudable desire to qualify himself to adorn his profession, by devoting his leisure hours to the study of such branches of knowledge as reflect a lustre on a naval life. At Halifax he first read Euclid's Elements, and studied astronomy. The books he was able to procure were few indeed; but application and perseverance supplied many deficiencies, and enabled him to make a progress, which a man of less genius could not attain under much superior advantages.

A lieutenant's commission was presented to him on the 1st of April, 1760, and he daily advanced in the career of glory. In September, 1762, he assisted at the recapture of Newfoundland, after which the English fleet remained some time at Placentia, in order to put that place into a better state of defence. During this period Mr. Cook had another opportunity of displaying his diligence, and manifesting his zeal in the service of his country: he surveyed the harbours and heights of that place, and, by this means, attracted the notice of Captain (afterwards Admiral) Graves, who was at that time Governor of Newfoundland. Captain Graves having entered into conversation with him, found him possessed of such intelligence and judgment, that he conceived a very favourable opinion of his abilities in general, and his nautical skill in particular; and in cultivating a longer acquaintance with him, was still more and more prepossessed in his favour.

Endowed with a vigorous and active mind, and stimulated, perhaps, by the success that had attended his past labours, and the hopes of future promotion, Cook continued to display the most unremitting assiduity to make himself acquainted with the North American coast, and to facilitate its navigation; while the esteem which Captain Graves had justly conceived for him, was heightened by the concurrent testimonies of approbation, which all the officers, under whom he had served so freely, paid him.

At the close of 1762, Lieutenant Cook returned to England; and on the 21st of December he married at Barking, in Essex, a young lady of the name of Batts, whom he tenderly loved, and who had every claim to his warmest affection and esteem. It is said that Cook had been godfather to this lady, and that he declared at that time his wish for their future union. If this anecdote is true, it is a singular instance of the firmness of his character, and the strength of his attachment. His situation in life, however, and the high and important services to which he was called, did not suffer him

to enjoy, without interruption, that matrimonial felicity which both parties seem to have been so well qualified to taste.

On the conclusion of the war in 1763, Captain Graves was again sent out as Governor of Newfoundland; and as that island was considered of great commercial importance, and had been a principal object of contention between Great Britain and France, the Governor obtained, at his pressing solicitation, an establishment for the survey of its coasts; and Lieutenant Cook was appointed to carry this plan into execution. He therefore went out with his friend the Governor; and having surveyed the small Islands of St. Pierre and Miquelon, which, by treaty, had been ceded to France, after the business was finished, he returned to England at the close of the season; and in the beginning of the following year, he accompanied his former patron, Sir Hugh Palliser, who had been appointed Governor of Labrador and Newfoundland, and prosecuted his surveys of the coasts as before.

For this employment, Cook was, by the unanimous voice of the best judges, deemed extremely well qualified; and the charts which he afterwards published, reflect the highest credit on his abilities. He also explored the interior of Newfoundland, in a much more accurate manner than had ever been done before; and by penetrating into the heart of the country, discovered several large lakes, the position of which he exactly ascertained. In this service he appears to have been occasionally engaged till 1767. However, we find him with Sir William Burnaby, on the Jamaica station, in 1765; and that officer having occasion to send dispatches to the Governor of Yucatan, relative to the longwood-cutters in the Bay of Honduras, Lieutenant Cook was selected for that mission, and he performed it in a manner that entitled him to the approbation of the Admiral. A relation of this voyage and journey was published in 1769, under the title of "Remarks on a Passage from the River Balise, in the Bay of Honduras, to Merida, the Capital of the Province

of Jucatan, in the Spanish West Indies, by Lieutenant Cook."

That Cook had, by this time, made a considerable proficiency in practical astronomy, is evident from a short paper, drawn up by him, which was inserted in the seventh volume of the Philosophical Transactions, entitled, "An Observation of an Eclipse of the Sun at the Island of Newfoundland, August 5, 1766, with the Longitude of the Place of Observation deduced from it." This Observation was made at one of the Burgeo Islands, near Cape Ray, on the south-west extremity of Newfoundland; and Cook's paper having been communicated to Mr. Witchell, he compared it with an observation made on the same eclipse by Professor Hornsby, and thence computed the difference of longitude of the places of observation, making proper allowance for parallax, and the prolate spheroidal figure of the earth. That Cook was now accounted an able mathematician, the admission of this paper into the Philosophical Transactions, and the notice that was taken of it, will sufficiently verify.

For the present reign it was reserved to carry the spirit of enterprize to its fullest extent, and to direct it to the accomplishment of the noblest purposes. As soon as the return of peace gave an opportunity for promoting the interests of science, by enlarging the bounds of discovery, two voyages were projected by his present Majesty, which were performed, as has been seen in our preceding volume, by Captains Byron, Wallis, and Carteret; and before the two latter gentlemen returned, a third was resolved on, the principal object of which was the improvement of astronomy.

It had been long before calculated, that the planet Venus would pass over the Sun's disk in 1769; therefore it was judged that the most proper place for observing this phenomenon, would be either at the Marquesas, or at one of those islands to which Tasman had given the several appellations of Amsterdam, Rotterdam, and Middleburgh; but which are now better known under the general name of the Friendly Isles.

This being a matter of much importance in the science of astronomy, the Royal Society, with a laudable zeal for its advancement, presented a memorial to his Majesty, requesting, among other things, that a vessel might be fitted out at the expence of government, to convey proper persons to observe this transit at one of the places already mentioned. The petition being readily complied with, and orders having been given by the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty to provide a vessel for that purpose, on the 3d of April, Mr. Stephens, the Secretary to the Board, informed the Society, that every thing was expediting according to their wishes.

Mr. Dalrymple was originally fixed on to superintend this expedition; a man eminent in science, a member of the Royal Society, and who had already distinguished himself respecting the geography of the Southern Ocean. As this gentleman had been regularly bred to the sea, he insisted on having a brevet commission, as captain of the vessel, before he would undertake the employ. Sir Edward Hawke, who then presided at the Admiralty Board, violently opposed this measure; and being pressed on the subject, declared that nothing could induce him to give the sanction of his name to such a commission. Both parties being inflexible, it was thought expedient to look out for some other person to conduct the expedition. Accordingly, Mr. Stephens having recommended Lieutenant Cook, and this recommendation being strengthened by the testimony of Sir Hugh Palliser, who was well acquainted with Cook's merit and abilities for the discharge of this office, he was appointed to this distinguished post by the Lords Commissioners, and promoted to the rank of lieutenant of the royal navy on the 25th of May, 1768.

This being done, Sir Hugh Palliser was commissioned to provide a vessel adapted for such a voyage. After examining a great number of ships then lying in the Thames, in conjunction with Cook, of whose judgment he entertained the highest opinion, they at last

fixed on the *Endeavour*, a vessel of three hundred and seventy tons, which had been built for the coal trade.

During this period, Captain Wallis having returned from his voyage round the world, and having signified to the Royal Society, that Port Royal Harbour, in King George's Island, now called Otaheite, would be the most convenient place for observing the transit, his opinion was adopted, and the observers were ordered to repair thither.

Mr. Charles Green, the coadjutor of Dr. Bradley, the astronomer royal, was nominated to assist Captain Cook in conducting the astronomical part of the undertaking; and he was accompanied also by Joseph Banks, Esq. the present President of the Royal Society, whose barometage, to which he has been since raised, reflects honour on his Sovereign and the order. This friend of science, at an early period of life, possessed of an opulent fortune, and zealous to apply it to the best ends, embarked on this tedious and hazardous enterprise, animated by the wish alone of improving himself, and enlarging the bounds of knowledge. He took two draughtsmen with him, and had likewise a secretary, and four servants, in his retinue.

Dr. Solander, an ingenious and learned Swede, who had been appointed to a place in the British Museum, and was an adept in natural philosophy, likewise joined the expedition. Possessed of the enthusiasm with which Linnæus inspired his disciples, he braved danger in the prosecution of his favourite studies; and being a man of erudition and capacity, he added no small eclat to the voyage in which he embarked.

Notwithstanding the principal intention of this expedition was to observe the transit of Venus, it was thought proper to make it comprehend other objects likewise. Captain Cook was therefore directed, after he had accomplished his main business, to proceed in making farther discoveries in the South Seas, which now began to be explored with uncommon resolution.

The complement of the *Endeavour* consisted of eighty-four persons. She was victualled for eighteen

undred and
al trade.
ng returned
ng signified
Harbour, in
e, would be
transit, his
re ordered

Dr. Bradley,
sist Captain
the under-
seph Banks,
ciety, whose
sed, reflects
his friend of
essed of an
to the best
rdous enter-
ving himself,
He took two
a secretary,

Swede, who
sh Museum,
ewise joined
usiasm with
aved danger
and being a
o small eclat

of this expe-
enus, it was
other objects
ected, after
proceed in
Seas, which
resolution.
consisted of
for eighteen

CAPTAIN COOK.

13

months; and carried ten carriage and twelve swivel guns, with abundance of ammunition, and all manner of stores, were taken on board. Being completely fitted for sea, Captain Cook sailed from Deptford on the 30th of July, 1768, and on the 13th of August anchored in Plymouth Sound, from which, after a few days stay, they proceeded on their voyage.

The first land they made, after their leaving the Channel, was on the 2d of September, when Cape Finisterre, and Cape Ortugal, in Spain, both came in view. They arrived on the 13th at Madeira, and anchored in Fonchial Road. Here unfortunately they lost Mr. Weir, the master's mate, who, in heaving the anchor, fell overboard, and was drowned.

They staid here till the 19th. On the 23d they saw the Peak of Teneriffe. This mountain is near fifteen thousand four hundred feet high. On the 29th they saw Bona Vista, one of the Cape de Verd Islands. From Teneriffe to Bona Vista they observed flying-fish in considerable numbers, which appeared very beautiful, their sides resembling burnished silver. Mr. Banks, on the 7th of October, caught what is called a Portuguese man of war, together with several marine animals of the Molusca tribe.

On the 25th they crossed the Line, with the usual forms. On the 29th, in the evening, they saw the luminous appearance of the sea mentioned by navigators, it emitted rays of light resembling those of lightning. Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander threw out a casting-net, when a species of the Medusa was caught, resembling a metallic substance greatly heated, emitting a whitish light. Some crabs were also caught at the same time, which were exceeding small, yet gave a very glittering appearance. These animals have not yet been described by naturalists.

There becoming a scarcity of provisions, it was determined to put into Rio de Janeiro, where they arrived on the 13th of November. Mr. Hicks, the first lieutenant, was sent before in the pinnace to the city, to inform the governor, that they put in there for re-

freshments and a pilot. The pinnace returned without the lieutenant, who was detained till the captain came on shore. Soon after a ten oared boat, filled with soldiers, came up, and rowed round the ship, without speaking; and soon after a second boat came up, with several of the Viceroy's officers; they enquired whence the Endeavour came, what she had on board; her number of men, guns, and destination. These, and many other questions, were answered without equivocation; when they apologized for detaining the lieutenant, and other steps they had taken, which they justified on the plea of custom.

Captain Cook went on shore on the 14th, and obtained leave to purchase what he wanted, on condition of employing an inhabitant as a factor. The Captain judging that the Viceroy imagined they were come to trade, endeavoured to convince him of his mistake, by acquainting him, that they were bound to the southward, to observe the transit of Venus; a very interesting object to the advancement of navigation, of which phenomenon he appeared to be totally ignorant.

The Viceroy having ordered that only the Captain, and such sailors as were necessary to be upon duty, should be suffered to land, they, notwithstanding, attempted to come on shore, but were prevented by the guard-boat. Several of the crew, however, unknown to the centinel, stole out of the cabin window at midnight, letting themselves down by a rope into the boat; and rowing to some unfrequented part of the shore, made excursions up the country, though not so far as they wished. When the Captain complained of these restrictions, the only answer he obtained was, that he acted in conformity to his master's orders. It was now agreed to present two memorials to the Viceroy; one was written by the Captain, the other by Mr. Banks, their answers were no way satisfactory. The Captain judging it necessary, in vindication of his compliance, to urge the Viceroy to an act of force in the execution of his orders, sent Lieutenant Hicks with a packet, with directions not to allow a guard in his boat. The

officer of the guard-boat did not oppose him by force, but accompanying the lieutenant on shore, went to the Viceroy, and acquainted him with what had passed, which induced his excellency to refuse opening the packet, commanding the lieutenant to return. He found a soldier had been put on board the boat in his absence, as a guard, and insisted upon his quitting it. The officer now seized the boat's crew, and conducted them to prison, under a guard; and the lieutenant was sent back to the ship, guarded likewise. When Mr. Hicks had acquainted the Captain with these transactions, the latter wrote to the Viceroy, demanding his boat and men, and inclosed the very memorial which he refused to receive from the lieutenant.

This express was sent by a petty officer, and the Viceroy promised to return an immediate answer. In the interim, in a sudden gust of wind, the long-boat, with four pipes of rum, went adrift, with a small skiff of Mr. Banks's that was fastened to her. The misfortune was still greater, as the pinnace was on shore. The yawl was manned immediately, but did not return till next morning, when she brought all the people on board. From them Captain Cook learnt, that the long-boat having filled with water, they had brought her to a grappling, and quitted her; and falling in with a reef of rocks, on their return, they were compelled to cut adrift the little boat belonging to Mr. Banks. In this situation the Captain dispatched another letter to the Viceroy, acquainting him with the accident; at the same time desiring he would assist them with a boat to recover their own: this was accompanied with a fresh demand of the pinnace and her crew. His excellency at length complied with both the request and demand; and the same day they fortunately recovered the long-boat and skiff.

Mr. Banks, on the 26th, artfully eluded the vigilance of the guard, and went on shore. He avoided the town, and passed the day in the fields, where the chief object of his curiosity lay.

Being prepared for sea, with water and provisions, they took on board a pilot the 1st of December; but the wind being contrary, they were prevented getting out. On the 7th, having passed the fort, the pilot was discharged, and the guard-boat quitted them at the same time.

The town of Janeiro is situated on the west side of the river, from which it extends about three quarters of a mile. The ground on which it stands is pretty level. Some of its streets run parallel from north to south, and are intersected by others at right angles. The principal street is near a hundred feet in width; the other streets are commonly twenty or thirty feet wide. The houses adjoining to the principal street have three stories; but in other places they are very irregular, though built after the same manner as in Lisbon.

The mines are extremely rich, and lie a considerable way up the country. They are kept so private, that any person found upon the road which leads to them is hung upon the next tree, unless he can give a satisfactory account of the cause of his being in that situation. Near forty thousand negroes are annually imported to dig in them, which are so pernicious to the human frame, and occasion so great a mortality amongst the poor wretches so employed, that in the year 1766 twenty thousand more were drafted from the town of Rio, to supply the deficiency of the former number.

On Thursday, December the 8th, 1763, having procured all necessary supplies, they left Rio de Janeiro. They did not meet with any material occurrence from this time to the 22d, when they were surrounded by great numbers of porpoises, of a singular species, which are about fifteen feet in length, and of an ash colour.

On the 23d they observed an eclipse of the moon; and about seven o'clock in the morning, a small white cloud appeared in the west, from which a train of fire issued, extending itself westerly: about two minutes

after they heard two distinct and loud explosions, immediately succeeding each other like cannon; after which the cloud soon disappeared.

On the 4th of January, 1769, they saw an appearance of land, which they mistook for Pepy's Island; but on their standing towards it, it proved what the sailors call a fog-bank. On the 14th they entered the Straits of La Maire; but the tide being against them, they were driven out with great violence, and the waves ran so high, that the ship's bowsprit was frequently under water; at length, however, they got anchorage at the entrance of a little cove, which Captain Cook called *St. Vincent's Bay*.

On Sunday the 15th, having anchored in twelve fathoms water, upon coral rocks, before a small cove, distant from shore about a mile, two of the natives came down upon the beach, in expectation that they would land; but this situation affording little shelter, the Captain got under sail again, and the natives retired. About two o'clock they anchored in the Bay of Good Success; and the Captain went on shore, accompanied by Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander, to search for a watering-place, and confer with the Indians. These gentlemen proceeded about a hundred yards before the Captain, when two of the Indians, having advanced forward, and seated themselves, they rose, upon Mr. Banks and the doctor's coming up, and each of them threw away a small stick, which they had before in their hands; this they did in such a direction, that the stick flew both from themselves and the strangers, which they meant as a token of peace. They then returned briskly towards their companions, who had remained at some distance behind, and made signs to the strangers to advance, which they accordingly complied with. The reception the gentlemen met with was friendly, though the manner was uncouth. The civility was returned, by the distribution of beads and ribbons, with which the Indians were much pleased. After a mutual confidence had been thus established, the rest of the English party joined, and a general

conversation, though of a singular kind, ensued. Three of the Indians now returned with the Captain and his friends to the ship, whom they clothed and entertained. They refused to drink rum or brandy after tasting them; intimating by signs, that it burnt their throats. They were of a middle stature, with broad flat faces, low foreheads, high cheeks, noses inclining to flatness, wide nostrils, small black eyes, large mouths, small but indifferent teeth, and black straight hair, falling down over their ears and forehead, which was commonly smeared with brown and red paint; and, like all the original natives of America, they were beardless. Their garments were the skins of guanicos and seals, which they wrapped round their shoulders. The women have a small string tied round each ankle, and wear each a flap of skin round the middle.

Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, Mr. Buchan, and several other gentlemen, accompanied by servants, went a considerable way into the country, where they found marshy ground, and had very cold blasts of wind and snow to contend with; however, after great fatigue, they at last attained a considerable eminence they had in view. Here they found a great variety of plants, that gratified their curiosity, and repaid them for their toil. It was now near eight o'clock in the evening; and Dr. Solander, who knew, from experience, that extreme cold, when joined with fatigue, occasions a drowsiness that is not easily resisted, entreated his friends to keep in motion, however disagreeable it might be to them: his words were, "Whoever sits down, will sleep; and whoever sleeps, will wake no more." Every one seemed accordingly armed with resolution; but on a sudden, the cold became so intense as to threaten the most direful effects. It was very remarkable, that Dr. Solander himself, who had so forcibly admonished and alarmed his party, should be the first who insisted upon being suffered to repose. In spite of the most earnest entreaties of his friends, he lay down amidst the snow, and it was with great difficulty they kept him awake. One of the black servants

ed. Three
n and his
ntertained.
ing them;
ts. They
faces, low
ness, wide
small but
lling down
commonly
like all the
beardless.
and seals,
he women
and wear

and several
s, went a
they found
wind and
at fatigue,
e they had
of plants,
m for their
e evening;
ence, that
occasions a
reated his
reeable it
hoever sits
ll wake no
rmed with
so intense
as very re-
had so for-
ould be the
epose. In
riends, he
great dif-
ck servants

became also weary and faint, and was upon the point of following the doctor's example. Mr. Buchan was therefore detached with a party to make a fire at the first commodious spot they could meet with. Mr. Banks, with four more, remained with the doctor, and Richmond the black, who, with the utmost difficulty, were induced to come on; but after walking a few miles farther, they expressed their inability of proceeding. When the black was informed, that if he remained there, he would soon be frozen to death, he replied, that he was so exhausted with fatigue, that death would be a relief to him. Doctor Solander said he was not unwilling to go, but that he must first take some sleep, notwithstanding what he had before declared to the company.

Upon this they both sat down, supported by bushes, and in a short time fell fast asleep. Intelligence now came from the advanced party, that a fire was kindled about a quarter of a mile farther on the way. Mr. Banks then waked the doctor, who had almost lost the use of his limbs already, though it was but a few minutes since he sat down; he nevertheless consented to go on. Every measure taken to relieve the black proved ineffectual; he remained motionless, and they were obliged to leave him in the care of the other black servant and a sailor, who appeared to have been the least hurt by the cold; and they were to be relieved as soon as two others were sufficiently warmed to supply their places. The doctor was with much difficulty got to the fire. Those who were sent to relieve the companions of Richmond, returned in about half an hour without being able to find them. There was a fall of snow which incessantly continued for near two hours, and there remained no hopes of seeing the three absentees again, at least, alive. About twelve o'clock, however, a great shouting was heard at a distance, which gave inexpressible satisfaction to every one present. Mr. Banks, and four others, went forth and met the sailor, with just strength enough to walk; he was immediately sent to the fire, and they pro-

ceeded to seek for the two others. They found Richmond upon his legs, but incapable of moving them; the other black was lying insensible upon the ground. All endeavours to bring them to the fire were fruitless; nor was it possible to kindle one upon the spot, on account of the snow that had fallen, and was still falling; so that there was no alternative, and they were compelled to leave the two unfortunate negroes to their fate; making them, however, a bed of boughs of trees, and covering them very thick with the same.

As all hands had been employed in endeavouring to move the two blacks to the fire, and had therefore been exposed to the cold for near an hour and a half, some of them began to be afflicted in the same manner as those they went to relieve. At length, however, they reached the fire, where they passed the night in a very disagreeable manner. The party that set out from the ship consisted of twelve, of whom two were already judged to be dead: it was doubtful whether a third would be able to return on board; and Mr. Buchan, a fourth, who had just recovered from fits, seemed threatened with them again. They had wandered so far into the internal parts, that the ship was a long day's journey distant; and they had not provisions left sufficient to afford the company a single meal.

The next morning, at day-break, nothing presented itself to view all round them but snow, the trees being equally covered with it as the ground; and the blasts of wind were so violent and frequent, that their journey was rendered impracticable, and there was much reason to dread perishing with cold and famine. However, at about six in the morning they were flattered with a dawn of hope of being delivered, by discovering the sun through the clouds, which gradually diminished. Previous to their setting out, messengers were dispatched to the unhappy negroes, who returned with the melancholy news of their death. At ten o'clock they set out on their journey to the ship; and in about three hours, to their great astonishment and satisfaction, they found themselves upon the shore, much nearer to

the ship than their most sanguine expectations could have flattered them. The congratulations every one on board expressed at their return, can better be imagined than described.

On the 20th, Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander made another excursion into the country. After walking for some time, they arrived at a small town, consisting of about a dozen miserable huts, constructed without art or regularity, in the form of a sugar loaf, with a place left open, which answered the double purpose of a door and chimney. Mr. Banks observed some European articles amongst them, from whence it was judged, that they travelled at times to the north, as no ship had touched at this part of Terra del Fuego for some years.

On Thursday, January the 26th, Captain Cook weighed anchor; and the weather being very calm, Mr. Banks sailed in a small boat to shoot birds, when he killed some sheerwaters and albatrosses; the latter proved very good food.

The doubling of Cape Horn, which has been represented as a very dangerous course, and it was generally thought passing through the Strait of Magellan was less perilous, the Endeavour doubled it with as little danger as the North Foreland on the Kentish coast; the heavens were fair, the wind temperate, the weather pleasant; and, being near shore, they had a very distinct view of the coast.

About ten o'clock on Tuesday, April the 4th, Peter Briscoe, servant to Mr. Banks, discovered land to the south, about three or four leagues distant. The Captain immediately hauled up for it, and found it to be an island of an oval form, with a lake or lagoon in the centre, that extended over the greatest part of it. The border of land which surrounded the lake, was in many places low and narrow, especially towards the south, where the beach consisted of a reef of rocks; three places on the north side had the same appearance, Captain Cook came within a mile on the north side; but though he cast a line of one hundred and thirty

fathoms, he found no bottom, and could not meet with any anchorage.

The Captain saw land again in the afternoon to the north-west. He reached it by sun-set, when it appeared a low island, covered with wood, in form circular, about a mile in circumference. No inhabitants were visible, nor any cocoa-nut trees, though the *Endeavour* had reached the shore within half a mile; yet the island appeared covered with verdure of various tinges. This island the gentlemen on board named *Thumb Cap*.

On the 10th, upon their looking out for the island to which they were destined, they saw land ahead. The next morning it appeared very high and mountainous, and it was known to be King George the Third's Island, so named by Captain Wallis, but by the natives called *Otaheite*. The calms prevented the *Endeavour* from approaching it till the morning of the 12th, when a breeze springing up, several canoes were making towards the ship. Each canoe had in it young plantains, and branches of trees, as tokens of peace and friendship; and they were handed up the sides of the ship by the people in one of the canoes, who made signals in a very expressive manner, intimating, that they desired these emblems of pacification should be placed in a conspicuous part of the ship; and they were accordingly stuck amongst the rigging, at which they testified their approbation. Their cargoes consisted of cocoa-nuts, bananas, bread-fruit, apples, and figs, which were very acceptable to the crew, and were readily purchased.

The ship lay off and on all night; and in the morning of the 13th they entered Port Royal Harbour, in the Island of *Otaheite*, and anchored within half a mile of the shore. A great number of the natives immediately came off in their canoes, and bartered their commodities for beads, and other trinkets. An elderly man, named *Owhaw*, who was known to Mr. Gore, and others who had visited this island with Captain Wallis, came on board; and as he was considered a

useful man, the Captain endeavoured to gratify all his enquiries. Captain Cook now drew up several necessary rules for the regulation of traffic with the inhabitants, and ordered that they should be punctually observed.

No sooner was the ship properly secured, than the Captain went on shore with Mr. Banks and Doctor Solander, a party under arms, and their friend the old Indian. They were received on their landing by some hundreds of the natives, who were struck with such awe, that the first who approached crept almost upon his hands and knees. He also presented to them branches of trees, the usual symbol of peace. This symbol was received, on the part of the English gentlemen, with demonstrations of satisfaction and friendship. They were conducted by the old Indian, accompanied by his countrymen, towards the place where the Dolphin had watered. Here, the ground being cleared, the chiefs of the natives threw down their boughs; and the Captain and his companions followed the example, after having drawn up the marines, who, marching in order, dropped their branches upon those of the Indians. When they came to the watering-place, the Indians intimated that they had their permission to occupy that ground, but it was not suited to their purpose. In the course of this walk, and a circuit through the woods, the Indians had got rid of their timidity, and became familiarized.

Next morning, before they left the ship, several canoes came about her, filled with people, whose dress denoted them of the superior class: two of these came on board, and each of them fixed upon a friend; one of them chose Mr. Banks, and the other Captain Cook. The ceremony consisted of taking off their clothes in great part, and putting them upon their adopted friends. This compliment was returned, by presenting them some trinkets. They then made signs for these gentlemen to go with them to the place of their abode; and the Captain being desirous of meeting with a more convenient harbour, and knowing

more of the people, readily assented. Therefore the Captain, Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, with the Indians, and other friends, got into two boats. About three miles distant they landed, among several hundred of the natives, who conducted them to a large house. Upon their entrance they saw a middle aged man, named Tootahah, who, as soon as they were seated, ordered a cock and hen to be produced, which he presented to Mr. Banks and the Captain, as well as a piece of perfumed cloth; which compliment was returned by a present from Mr. Banks. They were then conducted with great civility to several large houses, constructed in the same manner as those already described; the ladies, so far from shunning, invited, and even pressed them to be seated. Whilst they were afterwards walking along the shore, they met, accompanied by a great number of natives, another chief, named Tubora Tumaida, with whom they settled a treaty of peace, in the manner before described. Tubora Tumaida intimated, he had provisions for them, if they chose to eat; and they accordingly dined heartily upon bread-fruit, plantains, and fish.

During this visit, Dr. Solander having discovered that he had lost an opera glass, he complained to the chief, and interrupted the convivial party. This complaint was enforced by Mr. Banks's starting up, and striking the butt end of his musket on the ground, which alarmed the Indians so much, that they all precipitately ran out of the house, except the chief, and a few others of the superior class.

The chief appeared much concerned at this accident, and gave them to understand, with an appearance of great probity, that he would endeavour, if possible, to have the glass recovered; but that if this could not be done, he would make the doctor compensation, by giving him as much new cloth as should be thought equal to its value. The case, however, was in a little time brought, and the glass itself soon after. After this adventure was amicably terminated, they returned to the ship about six o'clock in the evening.

Therefore the
the Indians,
about three
hundred of
large house.
aged man,
were seated,
which he pre-
all as a piece
s returned
e then con-
houses, con-
y described;
, and even
were after-
accompanied
chief, named
a treaty of
Tubora Tu-
em, if they
heartily upon

discovered
ained to the
This com-
ing up, and
he ground,
they all pre-
e chief, and

is accident,
pearance of
possible, to
ould not be
nsation, by
be thought
as in a little
ter. After
ey returned

On Saturday, the 15th, the Captain, attended by Mr. Banks, and some of the other gentlemen, went on shore to fix on a proper spot to erect a small fort for their defence during their stay on the island; and the ground was accordingly marked out for that purpose, a great number of the natives looking on all the while, and behaving in the most peaceable and friendly manner.

Mr. Banks having gone a shooting in the woods, some marines, and a petty officer, were appointed to guard the tent in the interim; while several of the natives accompanied the gentlemen in this excursion. Before this party had gone far, they were alarmed by the discharge of two pieces, fired by the tent guard. Upon their return to the tent, it appeared, that an Indian had taken an opportunity to snatch away one of the sentinel's muskets; whereupon a young midshipman, under whose command the party was, very immediately ordered the marines to fire, which they did immediately amongst the thickest of the fugitive Indians, several of whom were wounded; but as the criminal did not fall, they pursued, and shot him dead. When Mr. Banks heard of the affair, he was greatly displeased with the guard; and he used his utmost endeavours to accommodate the difference; and through the mediation of an old man, prevailed on many of the natives to come over to them, bringing plantain-les, their usual signal of peace; and clapping their hands on their breasts, they cried Tyau, which signifies friendship.

Not many of the natives, however, appeared next morning upon the beach; and none of them came on board. From hence Mr. Banks and the other gentlemen concluded, that their apprehensions were not entirely removed, more especially as even Owahaw had shaken them. The Captain, in consequence of these disagreeable appearances, brought the ship nearer to shore, and moored her so as to make her broadside bear to the spot which had been marked for erecting the fort. In the evening he landed with some of the gen-

tllemen, when the Indians assembled around them, and they trafficked together as before.

The fort began to be erected on the 18th. Some of the company were employed in throwing up intrenchments, whilst others were occupied in cutting fascines and pickets, which the Indians of their own accord cheerfully assisted in bringing from the woods. The day the natives brought down such quantities of bread fruit and cocoa-nuts, that it was necessary to reject them, and to intimate to them, that the company would not want any for two days. Beads were trafficked this day for every thing.

Mr. Monkhouse, the surgeon, in his evening walk saw the body of the man who had been shot at the tent. It was deposited in a shed, close to the house where he had resided when alive. The corpse was placed on a bier, the frame of which was wood, with a matted bottom, supported by posts about five feet high. The corpse was covered with a mat, and over that a white cloth: by its side lay a wooden mace, and towards the head two cocoa-nut shells; towards the feet was a bunch of green leaves and small dried bouquets tied together, and stuck in the ground, near which was a stone, the size of a cocoa-nut: here was also placed a young plantain-tree and a stone axe. The natives seemed displeased at his approaching the body.

On the 25th, several knives belonging to the officers were missing; upon which Mr. Banks, who had lost his among the rest, accused one of the chiefs who had having stolen it, which caused him to be very unhappy as he happened to be innocent of the fact, Mr. Banks's servant having mislaid it; and the rest were produced in a rag by a native. This chief was some time before he would forget this accusation, the tears starting from his eyes; and he made signs with the knife, that if he had ever been guilty of such an action as was imputed to him, he would suffer his throat to be cut. However in general, these people, from the highest to the lowest are too much addicted to pilfering. On the 26th the swivel guns were mounted upon the fort, which pre-

und them, and

18th. Some
ing up intrench
cutting fascine
eir own accoun
e woods. The
ntities of bread
essary to reject
t the compan
eads were tra

is evening walk
een shot at the
ose to the house
The corpse was
was wood, with
about five feet
a mat, and over
wooden mace, and
ells; towards the
ball dried bough
near which was
was also placed
e. The natives
he body.

ng to the office
s, who had been
the chiefs with
be very unhappy
act, Mr. Banks
t were produced
ome time before
ars starting from
knife, that if
as was imputed
cut. However
st to the lower
On the 26th
fort, which pro

he natives into great consternation; and caused several fishermen, who lived upon the point, to remove farther off, imagining they were to be fired at in a few days.

The day following, Tubora Tumaida, with a friend, and three of his women, dined at the fort. Soon after his departure, he returned in much agitation, to acquaint Mr. Banks, that the ship's butcher had threatened to cut his wife's throat, upon her refusing to sell him a stone hatchet, which he had taken a fancy to, for a nail. It clearly appeared he had been culpable, and he was flogged on board, in sight of several Indians. As soon as the first stroke was given they interfered, and earnestly entreated that he might be un-d. This being refused, they burst into tears, and showed great concern.

During the forenoon of this day, canoes were continually coming in, and the tents at the fort were filled with people of both sexes. Mr. Molineux, master of the Endeavour, went on shore, and seeing a woman, whose name was Oberea, he declared she was the person he judged to be the queen of the island, when he came there on board the Dolphin in the last voyage. The eyes of every one were now fixed on her, who had made so distinguished a figure in the accounts that had been given by the first discoverers of this island. The person of the Queen Oberea was of a large make, and tall: she was about forty years of age; her skin white: her eyes had great expression: she had been handsome, but her beauty was now upon the decline. She was soon conducted to the ship, and went on board, accompanied with some of her family. Many presents were made her, particularly a child's doll, which seemed the most to engross her attention. Captain Cook accompanied her on shore, and as soon as they landed, he presented him with a hog, and some plantains, which were carried to the fort in procession, Oberea and the Captain bringing up the rear. They met Otahah, who, though not king, seemed to be at this time invested with sovereign authority. He imme-

diately became jealous of the queen's having the doll; which made them find it necessary to compliment him with one also.

On Saturday the 29th, in the forenoon, Mr. Banks paid a visit to Oberea, who was still asleep under the awning of her canoe. Upon entering her chamber, to his great surprise, he found her in bed with a handsome young fellow, about five-and-twenty; upon which he immediately retired with some precipitation, not a little disconcerted at this discovery; but he was soon given to understand, that such amours were by no means considered scandalous. The queen soon dressed herself, and waited upon Mr. Banks without the least emotion. The next day, Sunday, the 30th, Tomio came running to the tents, and taking Mr. Banks by the arm, to whom they applied in all emergent cases, told him that Tubora Tumaida was dying, owing to something which had been given him to eat by his people, and prayed him to go instantly to him. Accordingly Mr. Banks went, and found the Indian very sick. He was told, that he had been vomiting, and had thrown up a leaf, which they said contained some of the poison which he had taken. Upon examining the leaf, Mr. Banks found it to be nothing more than tobacco, which the Indian had begged of some of their people. Mr. Banks, now knowing his disorder, ordered him to drink of cocoa-nut milk, which soon restored him to health, and to his natural cheerfulness.

On the 1st of May, a chief, who had dined on board a few days before, accompanied by some of his women, who used to feed him, came on board by himself; and when dinner was on table, the Captain helped him to some victuals, thinking upon this occasion he would condescend to feed himself; but he never attempted to eat; and had not one of the servants fed him, he would certainly have gone without his dinner.

Soon after they took the astronomical quadrant, with some other instruments, on shore; and next day having occasion to use the quadrant, to their great astonishment and concern, it was missing. This was the more

...ving the doll;
...ompliment him
...n, Mr. Banks
...leep under the
...er chamber, to
...d with a hand-
...twenty; upon
...precipitation,
...; but he was
...urs were by no
...en soon dressed
...hout the least
...30th, Tomio
...Mr. Banks by
...mergent cases,
...ying, owing to
...eat by his peo-
...him. Accord-
...dian very sick.
...ting, and had
...tained some of
...examining the
...more than to
...some of their
...disorder, order-
...n soon restored
...lness.
...dined on board
...of his women,
...y himself; and
...helped him re-
...sion he would
...ver attempted
...ts fed him, he
...nner.
...quadrant, with
...ext day having
...great astonish-
...was the more

extraordinary, as a sentinel had been posted the whole night within a few yards of the tent in which it had been deposited; and it had never been taken out of the case in which it was packed. As the loss of this instrument would have rendered it impossible for them to have made the necessary observation respecting the transit, every possible search was made in the vicinity. At last Mr. Banks, accompanied by Mr. Green, and some other gentlemen, set out for the woods, where it was thought some intelligence of the robbery might be gained, if it had been committed by the natives. In the course of their journey they met Tubora Tumaida, with a few of the natives, who was made by signs to understand, that some of his countrymen had stolen the quadrant, and that it must be produced. The chief, on enquiry, found that the fact was so; and by his interference, the whole was recovered without any material injury, though it had been taken to pieces.

On Friday, the 5th, Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander, with the Captain, set out in the pinnace, taking one of Tootahah's people with them, to visit that chief. They soon reached Eparre, the place where he dwelt, which was but a few miles to the west of the tents. Upon their arrival, they were immediately conducted to him, whilst the natives shouted round him, *Taio Tootahah*; "Tootahah is your friend." They found him sitting under a tree, and some old men standing round him. As soon as he had made signs for them to sit down, Captain Cook presented him with a shirt and a broad cloth garment, with which he seemed greatly pleased; and put the garment on. After eating a mouthful together in the boat, they were conducted to a large area, or court-yard, on one side of his house, where an entertainment was provided for them, consisting of wrestling. The chief sat at the upper end of the area, with several of his principal men on each side of him, by way of judges, from whom the conquerors received applause. Ten or twelve combatants entered the area, and after many simple ceremonies of challenging each other, they engaged, endeavouring to

throw one another by dint of strength; then seizing hold of each other by the thigh, the hand, the hair or the clothes, they grappled without the least art, till one was thrown on his back: this conquest was applauded by some words from the old men, and three huzzas.

After this entertainment was at an end, they were informed, that some hogs, and a quantity of bread-fruit, were preparing for their dinner; which intelligence was the more agreeable, as their appetites were at this time exceedingly keen. But, instead of dining either on shore, or on board of the boat, they had the mortification of going as far as the ship, by the desire of the chief. As soon as the chief was known to be on board the ship, the people brought plenty of bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, and other provisions to the fort.

The forge being now set up, and frequently at work, it became not only a new subject of admiration to the Indians, but afforded the Captain an additional opportunity of conferring obligations on them, by permitting the smith, during his leisure hours, to convert the old iron, which they procured from the Dolphin, into different kinds of tools.

The natives, after repeated attempts, finding themselves incapable of pronouncing the names of the English gentlemen, had recourse to new ones formed from their own language. Mr. Cook was named *Toote*; Hinks, *Hete*; Gore, *Toura*; Solander, *Tolano*; Banks, *Opone*; Green, *Treene*; and so on for the greatest part of the ship's crew.

The following evening Mr. Banks was under the disagreeable necessity of reprimanding, in very strong terms, Tubora Tumaida, for having the insolence to snatch his gun from him, and firing it in the air; an action which surprised Mr. Banks greatly, as he imagined him totally ignorant of the use of it: And as their safety depended on keeping them in that state, he told him, with threats, that his touching his piece was the greatest of insults. The Indian made no reply but set off with his family to his house at Eparre. He being a useful man, Mr. Banks, accompanied by Mr.

h; then seizing
nd, the hair of
east art, till one
was applauded
three huzzas.

nd, they were
ntity of bread-
; which intel-
appetites were
stead of dining
, they had the
by the desire
as known to be
plenty of bread-
o the fort.

frequently at
t of admiration
in an additional
them, by per-
ours, to convert
in the Dolphin,

, finding them-
names of the
w ones formed
ok was named
Solander, *Tola*
nd so on for the

s under the dis-
in very strong
he insolence to
t in the air; and
greatly, as he
e of it: And a
m in that state
uching his piece
made no reply
at Eparre. He
panied by Mr

Molineux, thought fit to go after him, and they found him among a number of people, greatly dejected. However, as Mr. Banks judiciously caused all animosity to cease, they brought him back to supper; after which the chief and his wife both slept in Mr. Banks's tent.

Soon after, Mr. Banks detected Tubora Tumaida in having stolen some nails. Mr. Banks having a good opinion of this chief, was willing to put his fidelity to the test, and several temptations were thrown in his way, among the rest a basket of nails, which proved irresistible. He confessed the fact; and upon Mr. Banks's insisting upon restitution, he declared the nails were at Eparre: this occasioned high words, and at length the Indian produced one of them. He was to have been forgiven upon restoring the rest, but not having resolution to fulfil his engagement, he fled with the furniture and family before night.

On the 27th of May, Tootahah being removed to a place called Atahourou, Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, Captain Cook, and some others, set out in the pinnace to pay him another visit; and after making presents of a few trifling articles, they were invited to stay the night. Mr. Banks having accepted a place in Oberea's canoe, left his companions, in order to retire to rest. Notwithstanding the care Oberea took of his clothes, by having them in her own custody, they were stolen, with his pistols, powder-horn, and many other things that were in his waistcoat pockets. The alarm was given to Tootahah, who slept in the next canoe, and who went with Oberea in search of the thief; leaving Mr. Banks with only his breeches on, and his musket uncharged. They soon returned, but without success; and Mr. Banks thought proper to put up with the loss for the present. However, he went to the hut where Captain Cook and three of his associates lay, and began to relate his melancholy tale; but, instead of receiving much comfort from them, he was told, that they had shared the same fate, having lost their stockings and jackets.

It was now time to make preparations for observing the transit of Venus; and, from the hints which Captain Cook had received from the Royal Society, he sent out two parties to make observations from different spots, that in case they failed at Oraheite, they might succeed elsewhere: they employed themselves in preparing their instruments, and instructing such gentlemen with the use of them as were to go out. And on Thursday, the 1st of June, the next Saturday being the day of the transit, they sent the long-boat to Eimayo, having on board Mr. Gore, Mr. Monkhouse, and Mr. Sporing, a friend of Mr. Banks; each furnished with necessary instruments by Mr. Green. Mr. Banks, and several of the Indians, went out with this party. Others were dispatched to find out a convenient spot, at such a distance from their principal station as might suit their purpose.

The party that went to Eimayo in the long-boat, after rowing best part of the night, by the help of some Indians on board a canoe, which they hailed, found a proper situation for their observatory upon a rock, where they fixed their tents, and prepared the apparatus for the following day's observation.

On Saturday, the 3d, as soon as it was light, Mr. Banks left them to go to the island for fresh provisions. As he was trading with the natives who belonged to Tarrao, the king of the island, his majesty arrived with his sister, whose name was Nuna, in order to pay him a visit. After being seated as is customary, the royal present was brought, consisting of a hog, a dog, some cocoa-nuts, bread-fruit, &c. A messenger was dispatched by Mr. Banks for an adze, a shirt, and some beads, which his majesty received with much pleasure. Mr. Banks returned to the observatory with his visitors, and shewed them the transit of Venus over the Sun, informing them, that he and his companions had come from their own country solely to view it in that situation.

Both the parties which were sent out, made their observation with great success. They nevertheless dif-

for observing
which Cap-
l Society, he
ons from dif-
raheite, they
d themselves
tructing such
ere to go out.
ext Saturday
e long-boat to
Monkhous, e
ks; each fur-
Mr. Green,
went out with
nd out a con-
their principal

the long-boat,
y the help of
a they hailed,
vatory upon a
prepared the
ion.

as light, Mr.
esh provisions,
o belonged to
y arrived with
er to pay him
ustomary, the
a hog, a dog,
essenger was
a shirt, and
d with much
servatory with
of Venus over
is companions
y to view it in

t, made their
vertheless dif-

tered in the accounts of the times of the contacts more than might have been imagined. Mr. Green's account was as follows. In the morning: the first external contact, or first appearance of Venus on the Sun, was nine hours, twenty-five minutes, and four seconds. The first internal contact, or total immersion, was nine hours, forty-four minutes, and four seconds.—In the afternoon: the second internal contact, or beginning of the immersion, was three hours, fourteen minutes, and eight seconds. The second external contact, or total immersion, was three hours, thirty-two minutes, and ten seconds.

Latitude of the Observatory, $17^{\circ} 15' 29''$.

Longitude $149^{\circ} 32' 30''$ W. of Greenwich.

On the 19th, in the evening, soon after dark, while the canoes were detained by the Captain, Oberea, the queen, and several of her attendants, paid the gentlemen a visit. She came from Tootahah's palace in a double canoe, and brought with her a hog, bread-fruit, and other presents, among which was a dog. Dogs are esteemed here more delicate eating than pork; as those bred to be eaten taste no animal food, but live entirely upon vegetables; and the experiment was tried. Tupia undertook to kill and dress one, which he did, by making a hole in the ground, and baking it. It was deemed a very good dish.

Many of the natives visited the fort on the 21st, and brought various kinds of presents, and among the rest, Oamo, a chief of several districts on the island, whom they had never before seen, brought with him a hog. This chief was treated with great respect by the natives, and was accompanied by a boy and a young woman. The boy was carried upon a man's back, though he was very able to walk. Oberea, and some other of the Indians, went out of the fort to meet them, their heads and bodies being first uncovered as low as the waist. This was considered as a mark of respect: they had not noticed it before, but judged it was usually shewn to persons of distinguished rank among them. Oamo entered the tent; but the young woman,

who was about sixteen, could not be prevailed upon to accompany him, though she seemed to combat with her curiosity and inclination. Dr. Solander took the youth by the hand, and conducted him in; but the natives without, who had prevented the girl's entrance, soon found means to get him out again. The curiosity of Mr. Banks, and the other gentlemen, being excited from these circumstances, they made enquiry who these strangers were, and were informed, that Oamo was Oberea's husband, but that, by mutual consent, they had been for a considerable time separated; and that the youth and girl were their offspring. The boy was named Terridiri, and was heir apparent to the sovereignty of the island; and he was to espouse his sister as soon as he had attained the proper age.

On Monday, June the 26th, early in the morning, the Captain set out in the pinnace, accompanied by Mr. Banks, to circumnavigate the island. They sailed to the eastward; and in the forenoon they went on shore, in a part of the island under the government of Ahio, a young chief, who had often visited them at their tents. They also found here some other natives of their acquaintance. Having taken a survey of the harbour, and a large bay near which it is situated, they proposed going to the opposite side; but Titubaola, who was their conductor, not only refused to accompany them, but endeavoured to dissuade the Captain and Mr. Banks from going, saying, "That country was inhabited by people who were not subjects to 'Tootahah, and who would destroy them all." This information did not, however, prevent the execution of their design; and upon loading their pieces with ball, Titubaola took courage to go with them. They rowed till it was dark, when they reached a narrow neck of land that divided the islands into two peninsulas, which are distinct governments. As they were not yet got into the hostile part of the country, they agreed to spend the night on shore, where they were provided with supper and lodging by a lady, named Ooratooa.

On the following morning they pursued their passage

sailed upon to combat with der took the in; but the girl's entrance, The curiosity being excited enquiry who d, that Oamo mutual consent, parated; and ng. The boy went to the so- to espouse his er age.

the morning, companied by

They sailed they went on government of isited them at e other natives survey of the situated, they ut Titubaola, sed to accom- e the Captain That country ot subjects to all." This in- e execution of ces with ball,

They rowed arrow neck of insulas, which e not yet got ey agreed to ere provided d Ooratooa.

their passage

for the other government. They landed in a district which was governed by a chief named Maraitta, the burying-place of men; and his father was called Pahairade, the stealer of boats. Notwithstanding their names were so ominous, they gave the Captain and Mr. Banks a very civil reception; furnished them with provisions, and sold them a large hog for a hatchet. The curiosity of the natives was soon excited, and a crowd gathered round the English gentlemen, but they saw only two people whom they knew. They then advanced till they reached the district which was under the dominion of the principal chief, or king, named Waheatua. Having continued their journey along the shore for a considerable way, they at last saw the chief, and with him an agreeable young woman, about two-and-twenty, named Toudidde.

Towards the southernmost part of the island they found a good harbour, formed by a reef, and the circumjacent country remarkably fruitful. They landed again a little farther to the east. Mathiabo, the chief, with whom they had no acquaintance, nor had ever seen before, soon came to them, and supplied them with cocoa-nuts and bread-fruit. They purchased a hog for a glass bottle, which he took in preference to every other thing that was offered to him. They saw here a turkey-cock and a goose, which the Dolphin left on the island; they were remarkably fat, and seemed to be greatly admired by the Indians. A very uncommon sight presented itself in a house near this place: several human jaw-bones were fastened to a board of a semicircular form; they seemed fresh, and had not lost any of their teeth. Mr Banks could obtain no explanation of this mystery. They quitted this place, and arrived in a bay on the north-west side.

Several canoes came off here with some very beautiful women, who appeared to be desirous of their going on shore, to which they readily assented. They met with a friendly reception from the chief, whose name was Wiverou, at whose house they supped, in company with Mathiabo. Part of the house was allotted for

them to sleep in; and soon after supper they retired to rest. Mathiabo having obtained a cloak from Mr. Banks, under pretence of using it as a coverlet, immediately made off with it, unperceived by that gentleman or his companions. News, however, of the robbery was soon brought them by one of the natives; in consequence of which intelligence they set out in pursuit of the thief, but had proceeded a very little way, before they were met by a person bringing back the cloak, which Mathiabo had given up through fear. The house, upon their return, was entirely deserted; and about four in the morning, the sentinel gave the alarm that the boat was missing. Their situation was now extremely terrifying; the party consisted of but four, with a single musket and two pocket pistols, without a spare ball, or a charge of powder. After remaining in this distressful state of anxiety for a considerable time, dreading the advantage the Indians would take of it, to their great joy, the boat, which had been driven away by the tide, returned; and Mr. Banks and his companions no sooner breakfasted, than they departed.

They were now near the district named Paparra, which was governed by Oamo and Oberea, where they intended to spend the night. Mr. Banks and his company landed about an hour before it was dark, and found that they were both set out to pay them a visit at the fort. They, nevertheless, slept at the house of Oberea, which, though not large, was very neat; no inhabitant but her father was now in possession of it, who shewed them much civility.

It has been observed, that Captain Cook did not find Oberea possessed of the same power as when the Dolphin was at this place, and they were now informed of the cause. It seems that about four or five months before Captain Cook's arrival, the inhabitants of Tiarrabou, the peninsula to the south-east, made a descent here, and slew many of the people; that hereupon Oberea, and Oamo, who then held the government for his son, had fled, and taken refuge in the mountains; and that the victors destroyed all the houses,

they retired to
 back from Mr.
 overlet, imme-
 y that gentle-
 r, of the rob-
 he natives; in
 et out in pur-
 very little way,
 ging back the
 ough fear. The
 deserted; and
 gave the alarm
 ation was now
 d of but four,
 stols, without a
 er remaining in
 nsiderable time,
 ould take of it,
 d been driven
 . Banks and his
 they departed.
 amed Paparra,
 rea, where they
 ks and his com-
 was dark, and
 ay them a visit
 at the house of
 very neat; no
 ossession of it,

ok did not find
 as when the
 e now informed
 or five months
 itants of Tiar-
 made a descent
 that hereupon
 e government
 in the moun-
 ll the houses,

and pillaged the country. The turkey and goose, which had been seen in the district of Mathiabo, were among the booty; and the jaw-bones, which were discovered there, had likewise been carried off as trophies of victory.

On Friday, the 30th, they arrived at Otahourou, where their old acquaintance Tooratah resided; he received them with great civility, and provided for them a good supper, and a convenient lodging; and, notwithstanding they were so shamefully plundered the last time they slept with this chief, they spent the night with the utmost security, none of their clothes, or any other article, being missing in the morning. On Saturday, July 1st, they returned to the fort at Port Royal Harbour; having discovered the island, both peninsulas included, to be about one hundred miles in circumference.

Preparations were now made for departing; and Captain Cook hoped to quit the island, without any farther misunderstanding with the natives; but in this he was mistaken. Two foreign sailors having been out, one of them was robbed of his knife, and striving to recover it, the Indians attacked and wounded him in a dangerous manner with a stone: his companion also received a slight wound in the head. As Captain Cook would have been unwilling to have taken farther notice of the transaction, he was not sorry the offenders had made their escape.

Another affair, equally disagreeable, soon after happened. Between the 8th and 9th in the evening, two young marines retired secretly from the fort, and in the morning were not to be met with. Notice having been given for all the company to go on board the next day, and that the ship would sail that day, or the day ensuing, Captain Cook began to fear that the marines intended to remain on shore. He was apprized that effectual steps could be taken to recover them, without risking the harmony and good fellowship which, at present, subsisted between the English and the natives;

and therefore resolved to wait a day, in hopes of their returning.

The 10th, in the morning, the marines not being returned, an enquiry was made after them, when the Indians declared they did not propose returning, having taken refuge in the mountains, where it was impossible to discover them; and that each had taken a wife. In consequence of which it was intimated to several chiefs, who were in the fort with their women, among whom were Tubora Tumaida, Tomio, and Oberea, that they would not be suffered to quit it till the deserters were produced. They received the intimation with very little signs either of fear or discontent, assuring the Captain, that the marines should be sent back; but night coming on, Captain Cook judged it was not prudent to let the hostages remain at the fort, and he therefore ordered them to be brought on board. This gave an unusual alarm; and several of them, especially the females, testified their apprehensions with great agitation of mind, and floods of tears, when they were coming on board.

One of the marines was brought back in the evening by some of the Indians, who reported that the other and the two people who were sent to fetch them back would be detained till Tootahah, who was one of the confined, should be liberated. Mr. Hicks was immediately dispatched, in the long-boat, with several men to rescue the English prisoners; at the same time Captain Cook told Tootahah, that it was incumbent on him to assist them with some of his people, and to give orders, in his name, that the men should be set at liberty; for that he should expect him to answer for the event. Tootahah immediately complied, and this party recovered the men without any opposition.

At the time the chiefs were set on shore from the ship, those at the fort were also released; and, after remaining with Mr. Banks about an hour and a half, they all returned to their respective places of residence. When the deserters were examined, it was discovered

that the account which the Indians had given was no way false: they had become fond of two females; and it was their design to keep themselves concealed till the ship had set sail, and continue upon the island.

A native, named Tupia, who had been prime minister of Oherea when she was at the pinnacle of her authority, and was also the principal priest of the island, and, therefore, intimately acquainted with the religion of the country, having often testified a desire to go with them, on Wednesday the 12th, in the morning, came on board, with a boy about twelve years of age, his servant, named Tayota, and finally requested the gentlemen to receive him. As it was thought he would be useful to them in many particulars, they unanimously agreed to comply with his request. Tupia then went on shore, for the last time, to see his friends; and took with him several baubles to give them, as parting tokens of remembrance.

On Thursday, the 13th of July, the ship was visited by a multitude of the gentlemen's friends, and surrounded by numberless canoes, which contained the inferior natives. They weighed anchor about twelve; and the Indians took leave of the gentlemen on board, weeping in a friendly and affecting manner. Tupia supported himself in this scene with a becoming fortitude: tears flowed from his eyes, it is true; but the effort that he made to conceal them did him additional honour. He went with Mr. Banks to the mast-head, where he continued waving his hand to the canoes as long as they remained visible.

With regard to these people, they are in general rather of a larger make than Europeans. The males are tall, robust, and finely shaped. The females, of the superior class, are likewise generally above our common size; but those of the lower rank are rather below it, and some of them are remarkably little. Their natural complexion is a fine clear olive, or what we call a brunette; their skin is delicately smooth, and agreeably soft. The shape of their faces is in general handsome, and their eyes are full of sensibility and expression:

their teeth are likewise remarkably white and regular, and their breath entirely free from any disagreeable smell: their hair is, for the most part, black. Their motions are easy and graceful, but not vigorous; their deportment is generous and open, and their behaviour affable and courteous. They stain their bodies, by indenting or pricking the flesh with a small instrument made of bone, cut into short teeth; which indentures they fill with a dark blue or blackish mixture, prepared from the smoke of an oily nut, burnt by them instead of candles, and water: this operation, which is called by the natives tattaowing, is exceedingly painful, and leaves an indelible mark on the skin. It is usually performed when they are about ten or twelve years of age, and on different parts of the body.

They clothe themselves in cloth and matting of various kinds: the first they wear in fair, the latter in wet weather. They are in different forms, no shape being preserved in them; nor are the pieces sewed together. The women of a superior class wear three or four pieces; one, which is of considerable length, they wrap several times round their waists, which falls down to the middle of the leg. Two or three other shorter pieces, with a hole cut in the middle of each, are placed one on another, and their heads coming through the holes, the long ends hang before and behind, both sides being open, by which means they have the free use of their arms.

The mens' dress is very similar, differing only in one instance, which is, that part of the garment, instead of falling below the knees, is brought between the legs. This dress is worn by all ranks of people, the only distinction being quantity in the superior class. At noon both sexes appear almost naked, wearing only the piece of cloth that is tied round the waist. The boys and girls go quite naked: the first till they are seven or eight years old, the latter till they are about five. Their houses they seldom use but to sleep in, or to avoid the rain, as they eat in the open air, under the shade of a tree. Their clothes serve them at night for covering.

ite and regular, any disagreeable, black. Their vigorous; their behaviour, by small instruments, which indenture, mixture, prepared by them instead, which is called, painful, and it is usually per-
elve years of age,

matting of vari-
the latter in we
no shape being
sewed together
r three or four
le length, the
which falls down
three other shor-
le of each, an
s coming through
nd behind, both
ey have the free

ering only in one
garment, instead
nt between the
ks of people, the
superior class. A
wearing only the
waist. The boys
they are seven or
bout five. Their
or to avoid the
r the shade of a
ght for covering

and there are no divisions or apartments. The master and his wife repose in the middle; then the married people; next to these the unmarried females, and at a small distance the men who are unmarried.

The chiefs generally eat alone, unless when visited by a stranger, who is sometimes permitted to become second in their mess: leaves of trees being spread before them, serve as a table-cloth; and their attendants, who are numerous, having placed a basket before them, containing their provisions, and a cocoa-nut shell of fresh and salt water, seat themselves round them. They then begin by washing their mouth and hands, after which they eat a mouthful of bread-fruit and fish, dipt in salt water alternately, till the whole is consumed, taking a sup of salt water likewise between almost every morsel. The bread-fruit and fish, being all eaten, they next have their plantains, or apples, which they never eat without being pared. During this time a soft paste is prepared from the bread-fruit, which they sup out of a cocoa-nut shell; this finishes the meal; and the hands and mouth are again washed, as at the beginning. They devour vast quantities of food at a meal.

Their personal cleanliness is an object that merits peculiar attention. Both sexes never omit to wash with water three times a day; when they rise, at noon, and before they go to rest. They also keep their clothes extremely clean; so that in the largest communities no disagreeable effluvia ever arises, nor is there any other inconvenience than heat.

The chief manufacture of Otaheite is cloth; of this there are three different sorts, which are made of the bark of as many different trees, viz. the mulberry, the bread-fruit, and a tree not very unlike the fig-tree, which is found in some parts of the West Indies. The mulberry-tree, which the Indians call Aouta, produces the finest cloth, which is seldom worn but by those of the first rank. The next sort, which is worn by the lower class of people, is made of the bread-fruit tree, and the coarsest of the tree re-

sembling the fig-tree. This last sort, though more useful than the two former, on account of its keeping out water, which neither of the others will, is exceedingly scarce, being manufactured but in small quantities. The cloth becomes exceedingly white by bleaching, and is dyed of a red, yellow, brown, or black colour; the first of which is exceedingly beautiful, and equal, if not superior, to any in Europe.

Their fishing-lines are esteemed the best in the world, made of the bark of the Erowa, a kind of nettle, which grows on the mountains: they are strong enough to hold the heaviest and most vigorous fish, such as bonitas and albicorcs: in short, they are extremely ingenious in every expedient for taking all kinds of fish.

The tools which these people make use of for building houses, constructing canoes, hewing stone, and felling, cleaving, carving, and polishing timber, consist of nothing more than an adze of stone, and a chisel of bone, most commonly that of a man's arm; and for a file, or polisher, they make use of a rasp of coral, and coral sand. Some of their smaller boats are made of the bread-fruit tree, which is wrought with much difficulty, being of a light, spongy nature. The canoes are all shaped with the hand, the Indians not being acquainted with the method of warping a plank.

Their language is soft and musical, abounding in vowels, and is easy to be pronounced. But whether it is copious, Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander were not sufficiently acquainted with it to know. As very few of either of their nouns or verbs, are declinable, it must consequently be very imperfect. They found means, however, to be mutually understood without much difficulty.

The religion of these people appeared to be exceedingly mysterious. They emphatically style the Supreme Being, the Causer of Earthquakes; but their prayers are more generally addressed to Tane, supposed to be a son of the first progenitors of nature. They believe in the existence of the soul in a separate

ough more use. its keeping out, is exceedingly small quantities, y bleaching, and black colour; the l, and equal, it the best in the a, a kind of net- they are strong igorous fish, such y are extremely ing all kinds o

te; and that there are two situations, differing in their degrees of happiness, which they consider as re- motacles for different ranks, but not a place of reward and punishment. They suppose that their chiefs, and principal people, will have the preference to those of inferior rank; as they imagine their actions no way in- fluence their future state, and that their deities take no cognizance of them whatsoever. The office of priest is hereditary: there are several of them, and of all ranks: the chief is respected next to their kings; and they are superior to the rest of the natives, not only in point of divine knowledge, but also in that of naviga- tion and astronomy.

On the 13th of July, after leaving the Island of Ota- heite, they sailed with a gentle breeze and clear wea- ther; and were informed by Tupia, that four islands, which he called Huaheine, Ulietea, Otaha, and Cola- ba, were at the distance of about one or two days sail; and that hogs, fowls, and other refreshments, which had lately been scarce, were to be got there in abundance. They accordingly steered their course in search of these islands, and on the 15th discovered the island of Huaheine; and next morning they sounded near the north-west part of the island, but found no bottom with seventy fathoms.

Several canoes immediately put off; but they ap- peared fearful of coming near the ship, till they saw Tupia, who totally removed their apprehensions, and they ventured to come along-side; and upon assurances of friendship, the King of Huaheine, and his queen, went on board. Astonishment was testified by their curiesities at every thing that was shewn to them; yet they made no researches, and appeared satisfied with what was presented to their observation, making no enquiry after any other objects, though it was reason- able to suppose, that a building of such novelty and elegant as the ship, must have afforded many curiosities. The king, whose name was Oree, made a proposal to change names with Captain Cook, which was rea- sonably assented to. This custom is very prevalent in this

island, and is considered as a mark of friendship. They found the people here nearly similar to those of Otaheite in almost every circumstance, except, if Tupia may be credited, they were not addicted to thieving.

Having come to an anchor, in a small but fine harbour on the west side of the island, Captain Cook went ashore, accompanied by Mr. Banks, and some other gentlemen, with Tupia and the king. The instant they landed, Tupia uncovered himself as low as his waist, and desired Mr. Monkhouse to follow his example. Being seated, he now began a speech, which lasted about twenty minutes; the king, who stood opposite to him, answering in what seemed to be set replies. During this discourse he delivered, at different times, a handkerchief, a black silk neckcloth, some beads and plantains, as presents to their Eatua, or deity. He received in return for the Eatua, of the English a hog, some young plantains, and two bunches of feathers, which were carried on board. These ceremonies were considered as a kind of ratification of a treaty between the English and the King of Huaheine.

Wednesday the 19th, they went ashore, and carried some hatchets with them, with which they procured three very large hogs. As they proposed to sail in the afternoon, the king, accompanied by some others of the natives, came on board to take his leave, when his majesty received from Captain Cook a small pewter plate, with the following inscription: "His Britannic Majesty's ship Endeavour, Lieutenant Cook, commander, 16th July, 1769." He also was presented with some medals, or counters, resembling the coin of England, and a few other trifles.

From Huaheine they sailed for the island of Ulietea, and in the afternoon came within a league or two of the shore. They anchored in a bay, which is formed by a reef, on the north side of the island. Two canoes of natives soon came off from the shore, and brought with them two small hogs, which they exchanged for some nails and beads. On the 20th, Mr. Banks, the Captain, and others, went on shore, accom-

friendship. The kind of ceremonies that had taken place on their visit at Huaheine; after which, Captain Cook took possession of this and the adjacent islands, in the name of the King of Great Britain.

On the 24th they got under sail, and steered to the northward within the reef, towards an opening of five or six leagues distant. In effecting this, they were in the greatest danger of striking on a rock; the man who was at the helm, crying out on a sudden, two fathoms, at which they were much alarmed, but happily got clear without receiving any damage.

On the 29th they sailed to the northward; and in the afternoon finding themselves to windward of some islands that lay on the west side of Ulitea, they intended to put into one of them, in order to stop a leak, which they had sprung in the powder-room, and to take in some additional ballast.

On the 2d of August they anchored in twenty-eight fathoms water, in a convenient harbour. In the afternoon, many of the natives came off, and brought hogs, fowls, and plantains, which were purchased upon very moderate terms.

On the 3d they saw a company of dancers, consisting of some of the principal females of the island. They advanced side-ways, keeping time, with great exactness, to the drums, which beat quick and loud:

“His Britannic Majesty’s first lieutenant, Captain Cook, commanding the *Resolution*, and the *Discovery*, do hereby take possession of this island of Ulitea, in the name of Great Britain.” After, they began to shake themselves in a very lascivious manner, and put their bodies into a variety of strange postures; sometimes standing in a row one behind another; sometimes sitting down; and at others lying on their faces to the ground, and resting on their knees and elbows; moving their fingers at the same time with a quickness scarcely to be credited. The chief dexterity, however, of these dancers, as far as the amusement of the spectators, consisted in the lasciviousness of their attitudes and gestures, which decency forbids us to describe.

On the 5th, some hogs and fowls, and several large pieces of cloth, many of them being fifty or sixty

yards in length, together with a quantity of plantain and cocoa-nuts, were sent to Captain Cook as a present, from the Earee Rahie of a neighbouring island called Bolabola, accompanied with a message, that he was then on the island, and intended waiting on the Captain the next day.

They had now plenty of hogs on board; but as the animals could not be brought to eat any sort of European grain, or any provender whatever that the island afforded, they were reduced to the disagreeable necessity of killing them immediately on their leaving the islands; and the fowls all died of a disorder in the head, with which they were seized soon after they were brought on board.

As they were detained longer at Ulietea in repairing the ship than they expected, they did not go ashore at Bolabola; but after giving the general name of the *Society Islands* to the whole group, they pursued their course, standing southwardly for an island to which they were directed by Tupia, at above a hundred leagues distance, which they discovered on the 13th, and were informed by him that it was called Ohiteroa.

The next morning they stood in for land. When they came near the shore, they could perceive that the inhabitants were armed with lances of a considerable length. The appearance of the boat soon drew together a great number of them upon the beach, of whom leaped into the water, and endeavoured to gain the boat, but she soon left them behind; several others made the same attempt, but with as little success. The boat having doubled the point where they intended to land, rowed towards the shore, and began to make preparations for landing; upon which a canoe with some of the natives on board, came off towards them. They ordered Tupia to acquaint these people that they did not intend doing them any injury, but wanted to traffic with them with nails, which they shewed them: this information encouraged them to come along-side the boat, and they accepted of some

quantity of plantain, which were given them, with much apparent pleasure and satisfaction. In a few minutes, however, Captain Cook as a principal of them unexpectedly boarded the boat, with intention of dragging her on shore: some muskets were immediately discharged over their heads, which produced the desired effect, all of them leaping directly into the sea, and put back to the shore as fast as they could wade. The Captain gave up all hopes of establishing a friendly intercourse with these people, and returned to the ship.

On the 15th, they sailed to the southward: and on the 25th, they celebrated the anniversary of their leaving England, from whence they had been absent one year: a large Cheshire cheese, which had been carefully preserved for that purpose, was brought out, and a barrel of porter tapped, which proved to be as good as any they had ever drank in England.

On the 7th of October they discovered land at west by north; and in the afternoon of the next day they came to an anchor opposite the mouth of a little river, Tupia, at about a mile and a half from the shore. The Captain, with Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, and some other gentlemen, accompanied by a party of marines, went on shore in the evening, and proceeded to a few small

houses which they saw at a little distance. Taking the advantage of their absence from the boat, some of the natives, who had concealed themselves behind the trees, suddenly rushed out, and ran towards it, brandishing the long wooden lances which they had in their hands in a threatening manner. The cockswain fired a musketoon over their heads, which did not seem to intimidate them: he then fired a second time over their heads, but with no effect: alarmed at the situation of the boat, as they were now got near enough to discharge their lances at it, the cockswain levelled his musket at them, and shot one man dead on the spot. The natives, with astonishment at the fall of their companion, retreated to the woods with the utmost precipitation. The report of the gun soon brought the advanced

party back, and they immediately returned to the ship.

After this Captain Cook continued his course round the head of the bay. He was still in hopes of getting some of the Indians on board, and by presents, adding to civil usage, convey through them a favourable opinion of the English to their fellow countrymen, and thereby settle a good correspondence with them. Soon after, an event occurred, though attended with disagreeable circumstances, that promised to facilitate the design. Two canoes appeared making towards the land, and Captain Cook proposed intercepting them with his boats. One of them got clear off; but the Indians in the other, finding it impossible to escape the boats, began to attack them with their paddles: this compelled the Endeavour's people to fire upon them, whereof four of the Indians were killed; and the other three, who were youths, jumped into the water, and endeavoured to swim to shore: they were, however, taken up, and brought on board. They were at first greatly terrified, thinking they should be killed; but Tupia by repeated assurances of friendship, removed their fears, and they afterwards eat very heartily of the ship's provisions. When they retired to rest, in the evening, they appeared perfectly easy in their minds and slept very quietly. The next morning they testified much satisfaction, when told they were going to be released. They informed Captain Cook, that there was a particular kind of deer upon the island, likewise taro, capes, romara, yams, a kind of long peppercorn, bald coots, and black-birds.

On the 12th several Indians came off in a canoe, they were disfigured in a strange manner; danced and sung, and appeared at times to be peaceably inclined, at others to menace hostilities; but, notwithstanding this, Tupia strongly invited them to come on board, none of them would quit the canoe. Whilst the Endeavour was getting clear of the shambles, five canoes full of Indians came off, and seemed to threaten the people on board, by brandishing their lances, and other hostile

returned to the vessel: a four-pounder, loaded with grape-shot, was therefore ordered to be fired, but not pointed at them. This had the desired effect, and made them drop astern.

On the following day, Sunday the 15th, in the afternoon, a large canoe, with a number of armed Indians, came up, and one of them, who was remarkably clothed with a black skin, found means to defraud the Captain of a piece of red baize, under the pretence of bartering the skin he had on for it. As soon as he had got the baize into his possession, instead of giving the skin in return, agreeable to his bargain, he rolled them up together, and ordered the canoe to put off from the ship, turning a deaf ear to the repeated remonstrances of the Captain against his unjust behaviour. After a short time this canoe, together with the fishing-boats which had put off at the same time, came back to the ship, and trade was begun again. During this second traffic with the Indians, one of them unexpectedly seized Tupia's little boy, Tayota, and pulling him into the canoe, instantly put her off, and paddled away with utmost speed. Several muskets were immediately discharged at the people in the canoe, and one of them receiving a wound, they all let go the boy, who before was held down in the bottom of the canoe. Tayota, taking advantage of their consternation, immediately jumped into the sea, and swam back to the Endeavour. In consequence of this attempt to carry off Tayota, Captain Cook called the cape off which it happened, *the Kidnappers*.

They now passed a small island, white and high, supposed to be inhabited only by fishermen, as it appeared quite barren, and was named *Bare Island*; and on the 17th, Captain Cook gave the name of *Cape Magain* to a head-land.

Thursday, the 19th, the Endeavour passed a remarkable head-land, which Captain Cook named *Galapagos End Foreland*. Here three canoes came up, and an Indian came on board; he received some small presents, and retired to his companions. He wore a

new garment of white silky flax, with a border of black, red, and white.

October the 29th, they fell in with a small island, about a mile distant from the north-east point of the main; and this being the most eastern part of it, the Captain named it *East Cape*; and the island, *East Island*: it was but small, and appeared barren. Next morning, about nine, several canoes came off from shore, with a number of armed men, who appeared to have hostile intentions. Before these had reached the ship, another canoe, larger than any that had yet been seen, full of armed Indians, came off, and made towards the Endeavour with great expedition. The Captain now judging it expedient to prevent, if possible, their attacking him, ordered a gun to be fired over their heads: this not producing the desired effect, another gun was fired with ball, which threw them into such consternation, that they immediately returned much faster than they came. Next morning, at day-break, they saw between forty and fifty canoes along shore, many of which came off in the manner they had done the day before, shouting, and menacing an attack. One of their chiefs, in the largest of their canoes, made several harangues, and by the menacing flourishing of his pike, seemed to bid the ship defiance; but the gentlemen continuing to invite them to trade, they at last came along-side; and the chief who had been declaiming, after uttering a sentence, took a stone, and threw it against the side of the ship, which appeared to be a declaration of hostilities, as they instantly seized their arms. One of them took some linen that was hanging to dry, and made off with it. A musket was fired over his head to make him return; but this did not prevail; and even after another was fired at him with small shot, which hit him in the back, he still persevered in his design. Upon this the rest of the Indians set up their song of defiance. They could not, however, make any preparations for attacking the ship; but the Captain judged, that if he suffered them to go off without convincing them of his power,

h a border of

a small island, east point of the part of it, the island, *East barren*. Next came off from who appeared to had reached the at had yet been f, and made to expedition. The prevent, if possible a gun to be fired he desired effect, which threw them immediately returned morning, at day-fifty canoes along manner they had menacing an attempt of their canoes by the menacing the ship defiance to trade the chief who had sentence, took of the ship, whichilities, as they them took some made off with to make him return after another was hit him in the back upon this the resistance. They came for attacking if he suffered the of his power

avenging the insult, it might give an unfavourable opinion of the English to the natives on shore. He accordingly fired a four-pounder, which passed over them; and the effect it had in the water terrified them so greatly, that they made to shore with the utmost precipitancy.

The Endeavour passed the night under an island about twenty miles from the main, which they named *the Mayor*. In the morning of the 3d, they gave the name of *The Court of Aldermen* to a number of small islands that lay contiguous. The chief, who governed the district from Cape Turnagain to this coast, was named Teratu.

On the 4th, three canoes came along-side with several Indians: and in the morning of the 5th a great number of canoes, with near two hundred men, armed with spears, lances, and stones, made their appearance, seemingly resolved to attack the ship, and desirous of boarding her, but could not determine at what part, changing their stations, and paddling round her. These motions kept the crew upon the watch in the rain; whilst Tupia, at the request of the Captain, used every dissuasive argument he could suggest to prevent their carrying their apparent designs into execution; but his expostulations did not pacify them, till some muskets were fired: they then laid aside their hostile intentions, and began to trade. They sold two of their spears without fraud; but a third, for which they received cloth, they would not deliver up; and, instead of paying any attention to the demand that was made of it, they only laughed at them, and turned their expostulations into ridicule.

The Captain proposed to stay some days at this place, that he might observe the transit of Mercury, but he judged it expedient to chastise these people for their insolence and knavery; accordingly, some small shot was fired upon the principal offender, and a musket went through his canoe. His companions left him to his fate, without taking the least notice of him, though he was wounded; and continued to trade with-

out any discomposure. They for some time traded very fairly; but returning to their mal-practices, another canoe was fired upon, and struck: they soon after paddled away, whilst a round shot was fired over them.

Early in the morning of the 9th, several canoes brought a prodigious quantity of mackerel, one sort of which was no way different from the mackerel caught on our coast. These canoes were succeeded by many others, equally well loaded with the same sort of fish; and the cargoes purchased were so great, that when salted, they might be considered as a month's provision for the whole ship's company.

This being a very clear day, the astronomer, (Mr. Green,) and the other gentlemen, landed to observe the transit of Mercury; and whilst the observation was making, a large canoe, with various commodities on board, came along-side the ship; and Mr. Gore, the officer who had then the command, being desirous of encouraging them to traffic, produced a piece of Otaheitean cloth, of more value than any they had yet seen, which was immediately seized by one of the Indians, who obstinately refused either to return it, or to give any thing in exchange: he paid dearly, however, for his temerity, being shot dead on the spot. The death of this young Indian alarmed all the rest: they fled with great precipitancy; and for the present could not be induced to renew their traffic with the English. But when the Indians on shore heard the particulars related by Tojava, who greatly condemned the conduct of the deceased, they seemed to think it merited his fate.

This affair happened, as has been mentioned, whilst the observation was making of the transit of Mercury, when the weather was so favourable, that the whole transit was viewed without a cloud intervening. Mr. Green made the observation of the ingress, whilst Captain Cook was engaged in ascertaining the time by taking the sun's altitude. In consequence of

me time traded
ir mal-practices,
struck: they soon
not was fired over

several canoes
kerel, one sort of
e mackerel caught
ceeded by many
same sort of fish;
great, that when
month's provision

astronomer, (Mr.
landed to observe
the observation was
as commodities of
and Mr. Gore, the
, being desirous of
d a piece of Ot
any they had yet
by one of the In
er to return it, it
paid dearly, how
dead on the spot
armed all the rest
and for the present
their traffic with the
on shore heard the
greatly condemned
seemed to think

mentioned, which
transit of Mercury
ble, that the whole
intervening. No
the ingress, which
ascertaining the time
consequence of the

ervation having been made here, this bay was called
Mercury Bay.

Captain Cook sailed from this bay, after taking pos-
sion of it in the name of the King of Great Britain,
the 15th. A number of islands, of different sizes,
appeared toward the north-west, which were named
Mercury Islands. The inhabitants, though numerous,
have no plantations; their canoes are very indifferently
constructed, and are no way ornamented.

On the 18th, in the morning, the Endeavour steered
between the main and an island, which seemed very
fertile, and as extensive as Ulitea. Many canoes,
filled with Indians, came along-side, and the Indians
sang their war song: the Endeavour's people paying
them no attention, they threw a volley of stones, and
then paddled away; but they presently returned, and
renewed their insults. However, upon a musket being
fired at one of their boats, they made a precipitate re-
treat. In the evening they cast anchor, and early the
next morning they sailed up an inlet. The Endeavour
was now in a bay called by the natives Ooahaouragee;
and Captain Cook, with Mr. Banks, and Dr. Solander,
&c. went in the boats to examine it, and they did not
return till next morning. At the entrance of a wood
they met with a tree ninety-eight feet high from the
ground to the first branch, quite straight, and nineteen
feet in circumference; and they found still larger trees
of the same kind as they advanced into the wood. The
Captain called this river *Thames*, being not unlike our
river of that name.

On the 23d they tided it down the river; and on
the 24th they steered along the shore, between the
islands and the main, and in the evening anchored in
an open bay, in about fourteen fathoms water. Here
they caught a great number of fish of the sciennie or
bream kind; from which the Captain named this
Bream Bay. No inhabitants were visible; but from
fires perceived at night, the gentlemen concluded
it was inhabited.

The 26th, Captain Cook continued his course slowly along the shore to the north. This day two canoes came up, and some of the Indians came on board when they trafficked very fairly. Two larger canoes soon after followed them, and coming up to the ship the people in them hailed the others, when they conferred together, and afterwards came along-side of the ship.

The Endeavour passed a remarkable point of land which the Captain called *Cape Bret*, in honour of the baronet of that name. Within a mile to the north-east by north, is a curious rocky island; it is arched, and has a pleasing effect at a distance. The natives call the cape Montugogogo: It forms a bay to the west, which contains many small islands; and Captain Cook named the point at the north-west entrance, *Point Pocock*. The inhabitants had the same itch for cheating as the others. One of the midshipmen was so nettled at being imposed upon, that he had recourse to a whimsical expedient by way of revenge; taking a fishing-line, he threw the lead with so much dexterity, that the hook caught the Indian, who had imposed upon him, by the buttocks, when the line breaking, the hook remained in his posteriors.

On the 27th, the Endeavour was among a number of small islands, from which several canoes came off; but the Indians, from their frantic gestures, seemed disordered in their minds; they threw their fish into the ship by handfuls, without demanding any thing in way of barter. Some other canoes also came up, and saluted the ship with stones. It was then judged time to bring them to reason; and a musket, with small shot, being fired, a general terror was spread among them, and they all made a very precipitate retreat. Among the fish obtained from these canoes, were crabs in great plenty, and for this reason the Captain called these islands by the same name. For many days the wind was so very unfavourable, that the vessel rather lost than gained ground. On the 29th they entered into a large bay, where they anchored on the south

and his course slow
 a day two canoes
 came on board
 Two larger canoes
 ing up to the ship
 when they came
 along-side of the

able point of land
 in honour of the
 le to the north-east
 ; it is arched, and
 The natives call it
 to the west, which
 Captain Cook named
 e, *Point Pocock*
 for cheating as to
 so nettled at being
 to a whimsical
 g a fishing-line, to
 erity, that the hook
 d upon him, by which
 the hook remained

as among a number
 canoes came on
 c gestures, seemed
 threw their fish in
 nding any thing
 also came up, which
 s then judged to be
 musker, with small
 was spread among
 precipitate retreat
 e canoes, were called
 reason the Captain
 name. For many
 able, that the vessel
 on the 29th they
 hored on the south

est side of several islands; after which the ship was
 rrounded by thirty-three large canoes, containing
 ear three hundred Indians all armed.

On Tuesday, December the 5th, in the morning,
 ey weighed anchor, but were soon becalmed; and a
 rong current setting towards the shore, they were
 iven in with such rapidity, that they expected every
 oment to run upon the breakers, which appeared
 ove water not more than a cable's length distance:
 ey were so near the land, that Tupia, who was to-
 lly ignorant of the danger, held a conversation with
 e Indians who were standing on the beach. They
 ere happily relieved, however, from this alarming
 uation by a fresh breeze suddenly springing up from
 e shore.

On the 7th several canoes put off, and followed the
 endeavour; but a breeze arising, Captain Cook did
 not wait for them. They beat to windward four days,
 and made but little way. On the 10th, the land ap-
 peared low and barren, but was not destitute of inha-
 bitants: the next morning they stood in with the land,
 which forms a peninsula, and which the Captain named
Buckle Point. On the 16th they came off the north-
 ern extremity of New Zealand, which the Captain
 called *North Cape*. Their situation varied but little
 till the 24th, when they discovered land, which they
 judged to be the Islands of the Three Kings, though
 they did not resemble the description of them in Dal-
 mple's account.

January 1, 1770, they tacked, and stood to the east-
 ward, and on the 3d they saw land again; it was high
 and flat, and trended away to the south-east; beyond
 the reach of the naked eye. It is remarkable, that the
 endeavour was three weeks in making ten leagues to
 the westward.

On the 9th they saw a point remarkably high to the
 east-north-east; the Captain named it *Albetross Point*.
 At about two leagues distance from this point, to the
 north-east, they discovered a remarkable high moun-
 tain, equal in height to that of Teneriffe, the summit

of which was covered with snow, and it was named *Mount Egmont*. This day some very heavy showers of rain fell, accompanied with thunder and lightning. The Captain proposed careening the ship here, and taking in wood and water; and accordingly, on the 15th steered for an inlet, which he named *Queen Charlotte's Sound*.

On the 6th of February, in the morning, the Endeavour being careened, sailed out of the bay, which the ship's company, from an abhorrence of the brutal custom that prevails here of eating men, called *Cannibal Bay*. They steered eastward; and about six o'clock in the evening they were greatly alarmed at their being carried, by the rapidity of the current, very close to one of the two islands which lie off Cape Koamaroo, at the entrance of the Sound. The ship was in such imminent danger, that they expected every minute she would be dashed to pieces; but letting go an anchor, and veering one hundred and sixty fathoms of cable, she was brought up, when they were not above two cables length from the rocks: in this situation they were obliged to wait for the ebb of the tide, which was not till after midnight. At three o'clock in the morning they weighed anchor, and a fine breeze springing up soon after, they were carried through the strait with great velocity. At the entrance of the strait on the north side, there is a small island, which was named *Entry Island*.

On the 8th they were off Cape Palliser, when they discovered that the land trended to the north-east towards Cape Turnagain. On the 14th about sixty Indians, in four double canoes, came within a stone's cast of the ship, which they beheld with surprise. On the 19th they saw a ledge of rocks, and soon afterward another ledge, three leagues from the shore, which they passed to the north during the night, and discovered the others under their bow at day-break. Thus they had a narrow escape from destruction.

By the 27th they had sailed round the whole country and determined to depart from the coast as soon as

and it was named
y heavy shower
er and lightning
e ship here, and
ordingly, on the
med *Queen Char-*

morning, the En-
of the bay, which
nce of the bruta
men, called *Can-*

; and about su-
reatly alarmed a
y of the current
hich lie off Cape
Sound. The ship

ey expected ever
es; but letting g
and sixty fathom
n they were ne
s: in this situat
ebb of the tide

At three o'clock
and a fine breeze
arried through the
rance of the strait
land, which wa

alliser, when the
the north-east to
th about sixty l
ithin a stone's ca
surprise. On the

d soon afterward
shore, which the
t, and discovere
reak. Thus the

he whole country
coast as soon a

had taken in a stock of water. For this purpose Captain went on shore in the long-boat, and found excellent watering-place, and a proper birth for the

A council of the officers was now held, as to the age they should take to England; when it was resolved to return by the East-Indies, and with that view steer for the east coast of New Holland, and then w the direction of that coast to the northward. resolution being taken, they sailed at day-break, March 31, 1770, and taking their departure from eastern point, which the had seen on the 23d, they d it *Cape Farewell*.

On the 16th of April a small land-bird perched on digging, from which they concluded they were near; but they found no ground with one hundred and ty fathoms. At six o'clock in the morning of the they discovered land four or five leagues distant; uthernmost part of which was called *Point Hicks*, mplement to Mr. Hicks, the first Lieutenant. At they discovered another point of the same land, in a round hillock, extremely like the *Ram-Head* the entrance of Plymouth Sound, for which reason ain Cook gave it the same name.

On the 27th they saw several of the inhabitants walk lone the shore, four of them carrying a canoe on shoulders; but as they did not attempt coming off e ship, the Captain took Messrs. Banks and Solan- and Tupia, in the yawl, to that part of the shore e the natives appeared, near which four small es laid close inland. The Indians sat on the rocks he yawl was within a quarter of a mile of the , and then ran away into the woods. The surf og violently on the beach, prevented the boat from ng.

They anchored opposite a village of about eight es, and observed an old woman and three children out of a wood, laden with fuel for a fire; all of , as well as the woman, were quite naked. The woman frequently looked at the ship with the ut-

most indifference, and, as soon as she had made a table, they set about dressing their dinner with perfect composure.

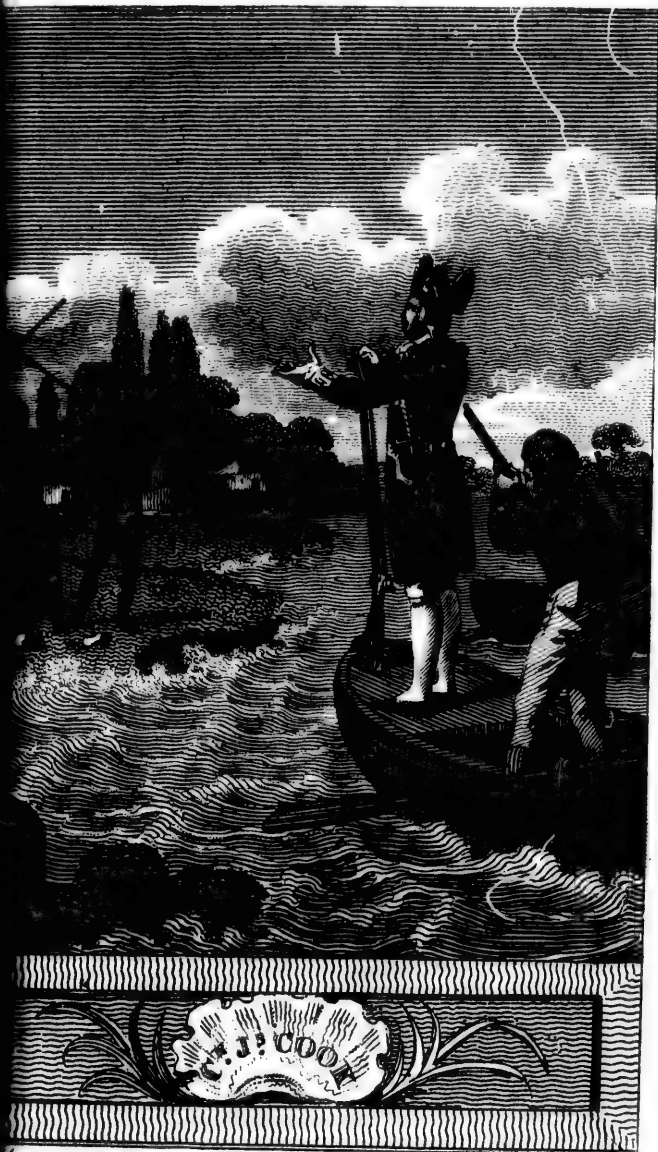
Having formed a design of landing, they manned the boats, and took Tupia with them; and they had not sooner come near the shore, than two men advanced as if to dispute their setting foot on land. The Captain threw them beads, nails, and other trifles, which they took up, and seemed to be delighted with. He then made signs that he wanted water, and used every possible means to convince them that no injury was intended. They now made signs to the boat's crew to land on which they put the boat in; but they had no sooner done so, than the two Indians came again to oppose them. A musket was now fired between them, on the report of which one of them dropt a bundle of lances, which he instantly snatched up again. One of them then threw a stone at the boat, on which the Captain ordered a musket, loaded with small shot, to be fired, which wounding the eldest of them on the legs, he retired with speed. The people in the boats now landed, imagining that the wound which this man had received would put an end to the contest: in this, however, they were mistaken; for he immediately returned with a kind of shield, and advancing with great intrepidity they both discharged their lances at the boat's crew, but did not wound any of them. Another musket was fired at them; on which they threw another lance, and then took to their heels. The crew now went up to the huts, in one of which they found the children, who had secreted themselves behind some bark. Here they found some pieces of cloth, ribbons, beads, and other trifles, and taking several of the lances, re-embarked in the boat.

On Tuesday, May the 1st, the south point of the bay was named *Sutherland Point*, one of the seamen of the name of Sutherland, having died that day, and been buried on shore. This day Messrs. Banks, Solander, the Captain, and a few other gentlemen, went

she had made a
r with perfect co

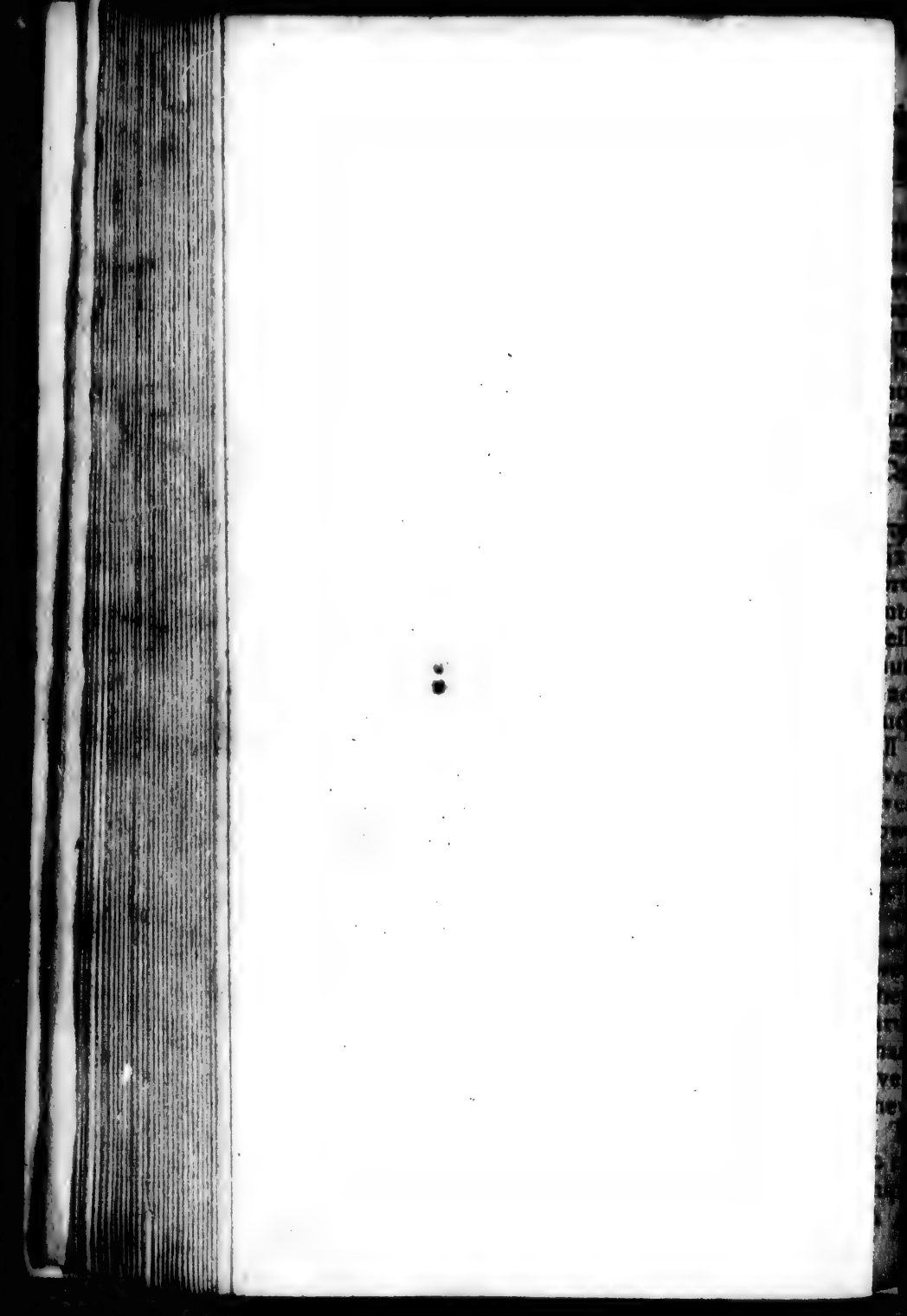
nding, they man
m; and they had
two men advanc
n land. The Cape
er trifles, which t
nted with. He t
and used every p
o injury was inte
boat's crew to la
t they had no soo
me again to opp
etween them, on
t a bundle of lan
again. One of th
on which the Cap
hall shot, to be fi
n on the legs, he
he boats now land
his man had rece
in this, however, t
ely returned with
ith great intrepid
the boat's crew,
other musket was
w another lance,
w now went up to
he children, who
ark. Here they
ds, and other thin
re-embarked in

e south point of
, one of the seam
g died that day,
Messrs. Banks, So
r gentlemen, went



Page 58.

J. Sharp & Co.



and left more presents in the huts, such as look-glasses, combs, &c. but the former ones had not been taken away.

They sailed from *Botany Bay*, as Captain Cook had named this place, on the 6th of May, 1770; and at length were off a harbour which they called *Port Jackson*; in the evening near a bay, to which they gave the name of *Broken Bay*. On the 13th they saw the smoke of many fires on a point of land, which was before called *Smoaky Cape*. As they proceeded onward from *Botany Bay*, the land appeared high, and well covered with wood. Two days after the Captain discovered a high point of land, which he called *Byron*.

Being found necessary to avoid the danger of some rocks, they shortened sail, and kept standing off from six o'clock in the evening till near nine, with a fine breeze and bright moon. They had got from fourteen to twenty-one fathoms water; when suddenly they fell to twelve, ten, and eight fathoms, in a few minutes. Every man was instantly ordered to his station, and they were on the point of anchoring, when, on a sudden, they had again deep water, so that they thought all danger was at an end, concluding they had sailed over the tail of some shoals which they had seen in the evening. In less than an hour, however, the water shallowed at once from twenty to seventeen fathoms; and as soundings could be again taken, the ship struck a rock, and remained fixed, but from the motion given her from the beating of the surge. Every man was instantly on deck, with countenances fully expressive of the agitation of their minds. As they knew they were not near the shore, they concluded they had struck against a rock of coral, the points of which being sharp and the surface so rough as to grind away what was rubbed against it, though with a gentle motion, they had reason to dread the horror of their situation! The sails being taken in, and the boats hoisted out to examine the depth of water, they found that the ship had been carried over a ledge of the rock, and lay hollow within it. She beat so violently that the

crew could scarcely keep on their legs. The moon now shone bright, by the light of which they could see the sheathing boards float from the bottom of the vessel; till at length the false keel followed, so that the expected instant destruction. Their best chance of escaping seemed now to be by lightening her. They therefore instantly started the water in the hold, and pumped it up. The decayed stores, oil-jars, cannon ballast, six of their guns, and other things, were thrown over-board, in order to get at the heavier articles; and in this business they were employed till day-break, during all which time it was observed, that not an anchor was sworn; so much were the minds of the sailors oppressed with a sense of their danger.

At day-light they saw land at eight leagues distance, but not a single island between them and the mainland, so that the destruction of the greater part of them would have been inevitable, had the ship gone to pieces. It happened, however, that the wind died away to a dead calm before noon. As they expected high water at eleven o'clock, every thing was prepared to make another effort to free the ship; but the tide fell so much short of that in the night, that she did not float more than eighteen inches, though they had thrown overboard near fifty tons weight; they now, therefore, renewed their toil, and threw overboard every thing that could possibly be spared. As the tide fell, the water poured in so rapidly, that they could scarcely keep her free by the constant working of two pumps. Their only hope depended on the midnight tide, and preparations were accordingly made for another effort to get the ship righted. The tide began to rise at five o'clock, when the sea likewise increased to such a degree, that three pumps were kept going till nine o'clock, at which time the ship righted; but so much water had been admitted by the leak, that they expected she would sink as soon as the water would bear her off the rock.

Their situation was now deplorable beyond description; and the imagination must paint what would be the powers of language to describe. They knew that when the fatal moment should arrive, all authority was

legs. The men at an end. The boats were incapable of conveying them all on shore; and they dreaded a contest for the preference, as more shocking than the shipwreck itself; but it was considered, that those who might be left on board, would eventually meet with a milder fate than those who, by gaining the shore, would have no chance of lingering the remains of life among the rudest savages in the universe, and in a country where fire-arms would barely enable them to support a wretched existence.

At twenty minutes after ten the ship floated, and was moved into deep water; when they were happy to find she did not admit more water than she had done before; as the leak had for a considerable time gained on the pumps, there was now three feet nine inches water in the hold. By this time the men were so worn by fatigue of mind and body, that none of them could keep more than five or six minutes at a time, and then threw themselves, quite spent, on the deck. The succeeding man being fatigued in his turn, threw himself down in the same manner, while the former jumped up, renewed his labour; thus mutually struggling for some time till the following accident had like to have given them up a prey to absolute despair.

Between the inside lining of the ship's bottom, and the outside planking, there is a space of about seven- or eighteen inches. The man who had hitherto measured the depth of water at the well, had taken it rather than the ceiling; but being now relieved by another person, who took the depth to the outside planking, it appeared by this mistake, that the leak had suddenly gained upon the pumps, the whole difference between the two plankings. This circumstance deprived them of all hopes, and scarce any one thought it worth while to labour for the longer preservation of a life which must so soon have a period. But the mistake was soon discovered; and the joy arising from such unexpected good news, inspired the men with so much courage, that before eight o'clock in the morning, they had pumped out considerably more water than they had

shipped. They now talked confidently of getting the ship into some harbour, and set heartily to work to get in their anchors; one of which, and the cable of another, they lost. Having a good breeze from the sea, they got under sail at eleven o'clock, and stood for the land.

As they could not discover the exact situation of the leak, they had no prospect of stopping it within-side of the vessel; but the following expedient, which one of the midshipmen had formerly seen tried with success, was adopted. They took an old studding-sail, and having mixed a large quantity of oakum and wool, chopped small, it was stitched down in handfuls on the sail, as light as possible; the dung of their sheep, and other filth, being spread over it. Thus prepared, the sail was hauled under the ship by ropes, which kept it extended till it came under the leak, when the suction carried in the oakum and the wool from the surface of the sail. This experiment succeeded so well, that, instead of three pumps, the water was easily kept under with one.

They hitherto had no further view than to run the ship into a harbour, and build a vessel from her materials, in which they might reach the East Indies; but they now began to think of finding a proper place to repair her damage, and then to pursue their voyage on its original plan. At six in the evening they anchored seven leagues from the shore; and the next morning they passed two islands, which were called *Hope Islands*. In the afternoon the master was sent out, with two boats, to sound, and search for a harbour where the ship might be repaired. They anchored at sun-set in four fathoms, two miles from the shore. One of the mates being out in the pinnace, returned at nine o'clock reporting, that he had found just such a harbour as was wanted at the distance of two leagues. At six o'clock the next morning they sailed, and soon anchored about a mile from the shore, when the Captain went out, and found the channel very narrow; but the harbour was better adapted to their present purpose, than any place they had seen in the whole course of their voyage. At it blew very fresh this day and the following night.

they could not venture to run into the harbour, but remained at anchor during the two succeeding days. The wind continued fresh till the 17th, but they then resolved to push in for the harbour, and with some difficulty moored the ship along-side of a beach. The Captain ordered the smith's forge to be set up, and directed the armourer to prepare the necessary iron-work for the repair of the vessel. He likewise ordered out the officers' stores and water, in order to lighten the ship.

Early in the morning of the 22d, the tide left the ship, and they proceeded to examine the leak, when they found that the rocks had cut through four planks into the timbers, and that three other planks were damaged. In these breaches not a splinter was to be seen, the whole being smooth, as if cut away by an instrument; but the preservation of the vessel was owing to a very singular circumstance. One of the holes was large enough to have sunk her, even with eight pumps constantly at work; but this hole was, in a great measure, stopped up by the fragment of the rock being left sticking in it. They likewise found some pieces of oakum, wool, &c. which had got between the timbers, and stopped many parts of the leak, which had been left open by the stone. Exclusive of the leak great damage was done to various parts of the ship's bottom.

While the smiths and carpenters were thus engaged, some of the crew were sent across the river to shoot pigeons for the sick. These people found a stream of fresh water, discovered many Indian houses, and had sight of a mouse-coloured animal, extremely swift, and about the size of a greyhound. Next day many of the crew saw the animal above-mentioned, which was a kangaroo; and one of the seamen declared he had seen the devil, which he described in the following words: "He was as large (says he) as a one gallon keg, and very like it; he had horns and wings, yet he crept so slowly through the grass, that if I had not been alarmed, I might have touched him." It appeared afterwards, that this poor fellow had seen a bat, which

is almost black, and as large as a partridge; and his own apprehensions had furnished his devil with horns.

Mr. Banks and a party made an excursion up a river, and saw several animals, one of which was judged to be a wolf. At night they made a fire, and took up their quarters on the banks of the river; but the night was rendered extremely disagreeable by the stings of mosquitoes. At break of day they set out in search of game, and saw four animals, two of which were chased by Mr. Banks's greyhound; but they greatly outstripped him in speed. It was observed of this animal, that he leaped or bounded forward on two legs, instead of running on four.

The ship being repaired, on the 4th of August they put to sea, and at noon came to an anchor, when the Captain gave the name of *Cape Bedford* to the northernmost point of land in sight, and that of *Endeavour River* to the harbour which they had quitted. The provisions they obtained, while in this harbour, consisted of turtle, oysters of three different sorts, large cavelle, or scomber, large mullets, some flat fish, a great number of small scrombri, and skate or ray-fish; purslain, wild beans, the tops of cocoas, and cabbage palms. Of quadrupeds there are goats, wolves, and pole-cats; and a spotted animal of the viverra kind. Dogs are the only tame animals.

During the six following days, they struggled incessantly to sail safely past the shoals and breakers, by which they were every way surrounded. After a conversation held among the officers, it was their concurrent opinion, that it would be best to leave the coast, and stand out to sea; and in consequence of these sentiments, they sailed on the 13th of August, 1770, and got in an open sea, after having been surrounded by dreadful shoals and rocks for near three months. They had now sailed above a thousand miles, during which run they had been obliged to keep sounding without the intermission of a single minute; a circumstance which, it is supposed, never happened to any ship but the *Endeavour*.

Having anchored on the 14th, they steered a westerly course on the following day, to get sight of the land, that a passage between that land and New Guinea might not be missed, if there was any such passage. They stood northward till midnight. When day-light came on, they saw a dreadful surf break at a vast height, within a mile of the ship, towards which the rolling waves carried her with great rapidity. Thus distressed, the boats were sent ahead to tow, and the head of the vessel was brought about, but not till she was within about one hundred yards of the rock, between which and her there was nothing left but the chasm made by the last wave which had washed her side. In the moment they expected instant destruction, a breeze, hardly discernible, aided the boats in getting the vessel in an oblique direction from the rock.

At this time a small opening was seen in the reef, and a young officer being sent to examine it, found that there was smooth water on the other side of the rocks. Animated by the hope of preserving life, they now attempted to pass the opening; but this was impossible; for it having become high water in the interim, the ebb tide rushed through it with amazing impetuosity, carrying the ship to a considerable distance from the reef. When the ebb tide was spent, the tide of flood again drove the vessel very near the rocks; so that their prospect of destruction was renewed, when they discovered another opening, and a light breeze springing up, they entered it, and were driven through it with a rapidity that prevented the ship from striking against either side of the channel. The name of *Providential Channel* was given to this opening. A high promontory on the main land, in sight, was denominated *Cape Weymouth*; and a bay near it, *Weymouth Bay*.

On the 21st several islands were discovered, which were called *York Isles*. In the afternoon they anchored between some islands, and observed that the channel now began to grow wider. They observed two distant

points, between which no land could be seen; so that the hope of having at length explored a passage into the Indian Sea, began to animate every breast.

The 24th of August, 1770, the cable broke near the ring in the attempt to weigh the anchor; on which another anchor was dropped, which prevented the ship driving. Determined, however, not to lose the anchor, they recovered it the next morning. Weighing anchor on the 25th of August, they steered north-west; and in a few hours one of the boats which was ahead, made the signal for shoal water. The ship instantly brought to, with all her sails standing. It was now found that she had met with another narrow escape, as she was almost encompassed with shoals; and was likewise so situated between them, that she must have struck before the boat's crew had made the signal, if she had been half the length of a cable on either side. In the afternoon she made sail with the ebb tide, and got out of danger before sun-set.

The ship now held a course due north, barely within sight of land, till the 3d of September; and as the water was just deep enough to navigate the vessel, many unsuccessful attempts were made to bring her near enough to get on shore: it was therefore determined to land in one of the boats, while the ship kept plying off and on. On this resolution, the Captain, accompanied by Messrs. Banks and Solander, set out in the pinnace; but when they came within two hundred yards of the shore, the water was so shallow, that they were obliged to leave the boat to the care of two of the sailors, and wade to land. They were no sooner clear of the water, than they saw several prints of human feet on the sand. They were now near a quarter of a mile from the pinnace, when three of the natives ran out of the woods, about one hundred yards beyond them, shouting in the most violent manner. They instantly ran towards our countrymen, the first of the three throwing something out of his hand which burnt like gunpowder, but made no noise, while the other two threw their lances. The English now fired, when the natives stopped, and cast

seen; so that the passage into the east.

broke near the shore; on which prevented the ship to lose the anchor, weighing anchor north-west; and as ahead, made instantly brought now found that cape, as she was was likewise so have struck be- ginal, if she had er side. In the de, and got out

h, barely with- per; and as the ate the vessel, p bring her near e determined to e kept plying off n, accompanied in the pinnace; ed yards of the ey were obliged the sailors, and ar of the water, eet on the sand. a mile from the ut of the woods, shouting in the an towards our wing something vder, but made ir lances. The opped, and cast

another lance; on which the muskets were loaded with ball, and again fired. The poor Indians ran off with expedition, having, most probably, been wounded in the unequal conflict.

As the ship was now clear of all the islands which had been laid down in such maps as were on board, they made sail during the night, and were surprised the next morning at the sight of an island to the west south-west, which they flattered themselves was a new discovery. Before noon they had a sight of houses, groves of cocoa-nut trees, and large flocks of sheep. In the evening, when the ship had entered the bay to which they had been recommended by some Indians, an Indian town was seen at a small distance, upon which a flag was hoisted on the fore-topmast-head. Presently afterwards three guns were fired, and Dutch colours were hoisted in the town. The ship, however, held on her way, and came to an anchor at seven in the evening. The colours being seen hoisted on the beach the next morning, the Captain concluded that the Dutch had a settlement on the island; he therefore dispatched the second lieutenant to mention what necessaries they were in want of.

On the following day, the Captain, attended by several gentlemen, went on shore, to visit the rajah. When they landed, they were chagrined to find that the cattle had been driven down to the beach. They, however, went on to the town. They were invited to dine with the rajah, but he did not partake of the entertainment, as it was not customary here to sit down with their guests. Their dinner consisted of pork and rice, very excellent of their kinds, served up in thirty-six dishes, and three earthen bowls, filled with a kind of broth, in which the pork had been boiled. The spoons were formed of leaves, but were so small, that the hunger of the guests would scarcely allow them patience to use them.

On the 20th, the Captain and Dr. Solander went again on shore; and while the latter proceeded to the town in search of Lange, the agent, the Captain staid

on the beach, with a view to buy cattle. At this place was an old man, who had been distinguished by the name of prime minister, because he appeared to be invested with considerable authority ; and the Captain now presented him with a spying-glass, in order to make a friend of him. At present there was nothing brought for sale but a small buffaloe, for which five guineas were demanded. Though the Captain knew that this was double its value, yet he bid three guineas, as he was willing to begin dealing at any rate. The person who had it to sell, said he could not take money till the rajah had been informed what was offered ; on which a man was sent to him, who soon came back with a message, that five guineas would be the lowest price : this the Captain refused to give ; on which a second messenger was dispatched, who staying a long time, Captain Cook was anxiously expecting his return, when he saw Dr. Solander coming towards the beach, escorted by more than a hundred persons, some of whom had lances in their hands, and the rest were armed with muskets. When the doctor arrived at the marketing place, he informed the Captain, that Lange had interpreted to him a message from the rajah, the substance of which was, that the natives were averse to all traffic with the English, because they would not give above half the real worth of the things which were offered for sale ; and that all trading whatever should be prohibited after that day.

The English gentlemen had no doubt, but that the supposed order of the rajah was a contrivance of Lange and his confederates, in the way of extortion ; and while they were debating how they should act in this critical conjuncture, one of Lange's adherents began to drive away such of the natives as had brought palm-syrup and fowls to sell, and others who were now bringing sheep and buffaloes to the market. Just at this juncture, Captain Cook happening to look at the old man, who had been distinguished by the name of prime minister, imagined that he saw in his features a disapprobation of the present proceedings ; and willing to im-

At this place
ished by the
appeared to be
nd the Captain
order to make
othing brought
e guineas were
y that this was
as, as he was
he person who
ney till the ra-
d; on which a
ck with a mes-
est price: this
a second mes-
ng time, Cap-
turn, when he
beach, escorted
of whom had
ere armed with
the marketing
ange had inter-
, the substance
rse to all traffic
not give above
vere offered for
d be prohibited

ot, but that the
vance of Lange
extortion; and
ould act in this
erents began to
brought palm-
ho were now
arket. Just at
look at the old
name of prime
atures a disap-
d willing to im-

rove the advantage, he grasped the Indian's hand, and gave him an old broad sword. This well-timed present produced all the good effects that could be wished; the prime minister was enraptured at so honourable a mark of distinction, and exerted himself with such success, that the whole business was now speedily accomplished. The natives, eager to supply whatever was wanted, brought their cattle in for sale, and the market was soon stocked. For the first two buffaloes, Captain Cook gave ten guineas; but he afterwards purchased them by way of exchange, giving a musket for each; and at this rate he might have bought any number he thought proper. There seems to be no doubt that Lange had a profit out of the first two that were sold, and that his reason for having said that the natives would take nothing but gold for their cattle, was, that he might the more easily share in the produce.

The Endeavour sailed from the Island of Savu on the 21st of September, and bent her course westward. On the 28th they steered north-west the whole day, in order to get sight of the land of Java; and on the 30th the Captain received from most of the officers and seamen, their respective journals of the voyage, respecting which he advised them to observe the most profound secrecy: and he likewise possessed himself of the log-book. On the night following there was a storm of thunder and lightning, when the land of Java was seen to the eastward by the brightness of the lightning.

Early in the morning of the 2d of October, they were close in with the coast of Java, along which they now steered. As their faithful Indian friend, Tupia, was at this time extremely ill, the Captain dispatched a boat to the shore to endeavour to bring them some refreshing fruits, and likewise to procure grass for the buffaloes. In a few hours they obtained what they were sent for, and returned to the ship, which proceeded at a slow rate during the night. On the 3d, in the morning, the Dutch packet-boat was observed sailing after the Endeavour. The master had brought with him

two books, in one of which he wrote down the Captain's name, and that of the vessel, to be sent to the Governor and Council of the Indies; and in the other book he requested that some of the gentlemen on board would likewise write down the name of the vessel, with that of the Captain, whence she came, and to what port she was bound.

Soon after the ship was obliged to come to an anchor, for want of wind. A breeze, however, springing up, she held on her way till the following morning, when she was again obliged to be brought to an anchor, owing to the rapidity of the current. This day, and the next, they weighed anchor, and brought to several times. On the 8th they were once more obliged to anchor near a little island, which was not laid down in any of their charts. It is one of those that bear the name of the Milles Isles; and Messrs. Solander and Banks having landed upon it, collected a few plants, and shot a bat which was a yard long, being measured from the extreme points of the wings. The ship now made but slow way till night, when the land breeze springing up, they sailed to the east south-east, and on the following day they came to an anchor in the road of Batavia.

The Endeavour had no sooner anchored, than a ship was observed with a broad pendant flying, from which a boat was dispatched to demand the name of the vessel, with that of the commander. To these enquiries Captain Cook gave such answers as he thought proper, and the officer who commanded the boat departed. This gentleman, and the crew that attended him, were so worn down by the unhealthiness of the climate, that they appeared but as the shadows of men; which the Captain deemed a sad presage of the havock which death would soon make among his crew; yet at present there was not one invalid on board, except the Indian Tupia. The English tars, whose want of foresight, and defiance of danger, is notorious, seemed not to entertain the least idea that even sickness would attack a set of men so hardened as they were by different

down the Cap-
to be sent to the
and in the other
gentlemen on
ame of the ves-
he came, and to

he to an anchor,
, springing up,
morning, when
an anchor, ow-
s day, and the
ght to several

more obliged to
not laid down in
that bear the
Solander and
a few plants,
being measured
The ship now
he land breeze
east, and on the
n the road of

ed, than a ship
g, from which
e of the vessel,
enquiries Cap-
t proper, and
parted. This
him, were so
climate, that
n; which the
havock which
; yet at pre-
t, except the
vant of fore-
seemed not
ess would at-
e by different

imates; but, alas! they had but very little idea of the
fatal contagion which impregnates the air of Batavia.

The officers and seamen concurring in opinion, that
the ship could not safely put to sea again in her present
condition, the Captain resolved to solicit permission to
leave her down; but as he had learnt that this must be
done in writing, he drew up a petition, and had it
translated into Dutch. On the 10th of October, 1770,
the Captain, and the rest of the gentlemen, went on
shore, and applied to the only English gentleman then
resident at Batavia; this gentleman, whose name was
Leith, received his countrymen in the politest man-
ner, and entertained them at dinner with great hospi-
tality.

In the afternoon Captain Cook attended the gover-
nor-general, who received him politely, and told him
to wait on the council the next morning, when his pe-
tition should be laid before them, and every thing he
solicited would be readily granted.

The next day Captain Cook waited on the gentle-
men of the council, who informed him, that all his re-
quests should be complied with. In the interim, the
other gentlemen made a contract with the master of a
public hotel, to furnish them and their friends with as
much tea, coffee, punch, and tobacco, as they might
have occasion for, and to keep them a separate table,
for nine shillings a day, English money; they were
likewise to pay for every servant that attended them,
fifteen pence a day. It was soon discovered, that they
had been vilely imposed on; for these charges were
above twice as much as would have been demanded at
a private house. They appeared to live elegantly, but
at the same time were but ill supplied. The gentle-
men having found fault with their fare, were afterwards
supplied in a better manner: but Mr. Banks, not ap-
proving the conduct of the master of the hotel, hired
lodgings for himself, and his attendants, at the adjoining
house, for which he agreed to pay five-and-forty shil-
lings a month.

Captain Cook now applied to several persons to advance him money sufficient to defray the expense repairing the ship; but not one could be found in the whole town who had the requisite sum in his possession or, if he had, was willing to advance it; he therefore made application to the governor, who issued his order that he should be supplied out of the treasury of the Dutch East India Company.

After a little more than a week spent at Batavia, the ill effects of the climate began to be severely felt. Dr. Solander and Mr. Banks were indisposed with fever. Mr. Banks's two servants were exceedingly ill; the Indian boy, Tayota, had an inflammation on his lungs and Tupia was so bad, that his life was despaired of. Their indisposition was attributed partly to the heat of the climate, and partly to the swampy situation of the town and the stench of the dirty canals with which it abounded.

On the 5th of November died Mr. Monkhouse, the surgeon, whose loss was the more severely felt, as he was a man of skill in his profession, and fell a sacrifice to the pestiferous air of the country, at a time when his abilities were most wanted. Death now advanced with hasty strides among our adventurous countrymen who were equally unable to resist his power, or shake his embraces. Several Malay servants were engaged to wait on those who were ill; but these people were exceedingly remiss in their duty, that it was no uncommon thing for the sick man to leave his bed in search of his attendant. The Indian boy, Tayota, paid the debt of nature on the 9th of this month; and Tupia, whose tender affection for the youth can be equalled only by that of a parent for a favourite child, was so shocked by the loss, that it was evident he could not long survive him.

By this time the ship's bottom having been carefully surveyed, our countrymen had ample reason to be grateful to that Providence, by which they had been preserved during a passage of several hundred miles through the most dangerous seas on the face of the globe; for the sheathing in several places was torn from

ral persons to ad
y the expense
be found in the
n in his possession
e it; he therefore
o issued his order
e treasury of the
ent at Batavia, the
severely felt. Dis
posed with fever
ceedingly ill; the
ation on his lungs
e was despaired
rtly to the heat
uation of the town
th which it abounded
r. Monkhouse, the
severely felt, as
and fell a sacrific
try, at a time when
eath now advanced
tuturous countrymen
t his power, or strength
nts were engaged
these people were
t it was no uncommon
his bed in search
yota, paid the debt
and Tupia, who
e equalled only
l, was so shocked
ould not long survive
aving been carefully
ample reason to
hich they had been
eral hundred men
on the face of the
laces was torn from

the vessel, the false keel was in a great measure gone, the main keel was damaged in many parts, several of the planks had received great injury, and a part of three of them was thinner than the sole of a shoe.

Messrs. Solander and Banks were now so worn down by their disorders, that the physician, who attended them, recommended the country air as the only thing that could possibly restore them to the wishes of their friends. In consequence of this advice, they hired a country house of the master of the hotel, who engaged to supply them with slaves, and to furnish their table; but as they had sufficiently experienced the worthlessness of these slaves, they bought two Malay women, who soon became excellent nurses, from that tenderness of nature which does so much honour to the sex. While these gentlemen were taking measures for the recovery of their health, poor Tupia fell a victim to the ravages of his disorder, and to his grief for the deceased Yota: they were both buried in the Island of Edam. Captain Cook was now taken ill; and Mr. Sporing, a sailor who attended Messrs. Banks and Solander at their country-house, were attacked with intermitting fevers; but those two gentlemen grew something better, though their recovery was very slow. Their house was situated on the borders of a rivulet, which, of course, assisted the circulation of the air, and it was likewise open to the sea breeze.

The ship being at length repaired, the sick people were received on board her, and the greater part of the water and stores taken in, she sailed from Onrust on the 8th of December, and anchored in the road of Batavia. On the 24th Captain Cook took leave of the governor, and some other gentlemen, who had distinguished themselves by the civilities they shewed him. Immediately after he went on board, attended by Messrs. Banks, and the other gentlemen who had hitherto resided in the town, and they got under sail the next morning.

Early in the morning of 27th of December, 1770, the Endeavour left the road of Batavia, and, after seven-

ral delays, occasioned by the wind being contrary, she stood over for the shore of Java, on the 1st of January, 1771. As many of the ship's crew, who had been very ill while at Batavia, were now become much worse the vessel was brought to an anchor in the afternoon of the 5th near Prince's Island, with a view to get some necessary refreshments, and likewise to take in wood and water. Messrs. Solander and Banks went ashore with the Captain; and they were no sooner landed than some of the natives conducted them to the king of the island, with whom they endeavoured to make a bargain for some turtle, but the price could not be agreed on. As our adventurers had no doubt but that they should purchase on their own terms the following day they left the Indians, and proceeded in search of a proper place to fill water, which was found.

Next day they purchased, at very moderate prices as many turtle as they had occasion for, and the whole ship's company fed on this delicious fish. The king was at this time at a house situated in a rice field, where Mr. Banks waited on him, and found him cooking his own victuals.

On the 12th, while the Captain was on shore, giving orders to the people who were cutting wood and filling water, he was told, that one of the natives had stolen an axe. The thief was unknown; but the Captain, resolving not to pave the way for future depredations of this kind, by taking no notice of the first offence, he immediately applied to the king; and in consequence of this application, the axe was brought down to the watering-place the next day. The Indian, who brought it back, said it was left at his house in the night; but was suspected that himself was the thief. After a stay of ten days at Prince's Island, during which they purchased vegetables of various kinds, fowls, deer, and turtle, the anchor was weighed, and the vessel once more put to sea.

After a passage in which nothing remarkable occurred, the ship was brought to an anchor off the Cape of Good Hope, on the 15th of March, 1771. The Cap

ing contrary, the
 e 1st of January,
 , who had been
 come much worse
 n the afternoon
 view to get some
 to take in wood
 banks went ashore
 no sooner landed
 em to the king
 ed to make a bar
 uld not be agree
 ubt but that the
 the following day
 in search of a pro
 and.

y moderate price
 for, and the whole
 ish. The king wa
 a rice field, when
 nd him cooking

as on shore, giving
 ng wood and filling
 natives had stolen
 but the Captain
 ure depredations
 ne first offence,
 nd in consequence
 ught down to the
 dian, who brought
 n the night; but
 hief. After a stay
 during which the
 s, fowls, deer, and
 nd the vessel on

remarkable occur
 or off the Cape
 1771. The Cap

in repaired instantly to the Governor, who said that
 ch refreshments as the country supplied, should be
 cheerfully granted him; on which a house was hired for
 e sick, who soon recovered, and on the 14th of April,
 1771, the anchor of the Endeavour was weighed, and
 e once more put to sea. On Monday, May-day,
 ey came to an anchor off the Island of St. Helena;
 d as they proposed to remain three days, Mr. Banks
 employed the interval in surveying every object that
 as thought worthy of notice.

On the 4th of May, the Endeavour sailed from the
 ad of St. Helena, together with the Portland man of
 ar, and several sail of Indiamen. They kept company
 th the man of war and Indiamen till the 10th. But
 aptain Cook, observing that they were out-sailed by
 the other ships, and consequently imagining that
 me of them would reach England before him, made
 nals to speak with the Portland; when the Captain
 that vessel came on board, and received from Cap-
 n Cook a letter to the Lords of the Admiralty, to-
 ther with a box, in which were deposited the journals
 many of the officers, and the ship's log-books.

On the 23d they lost sight of all the ships they sailed
 company with from St. Helena; and in the after-
 on of the same day, Mr. Hicks, the first lieutenant,
 ed of a consumption, with which he had been afflict-
 during the whole voyage. No single occurrence
 orth recording happened from this time, till the ship
 me to an anchor in the Downs, which was on the 12th
 June following, after an absence of two years, nine
 nths, and fourteen days.

SECOND VOYAGE.

Our adventurous and persevering navigator did not
 g enjoy repose. Government soon projected ano-
 r expedition to complete the discovery of the South-
 Hemisphere, which for ages had been considered,
 some of the ablest geographers, as containing ano-

ther continent. Therefore, to ascertain this fact, the ships were fitted out, and, that nothing might be omitted, which could facilitate the enterprise, they were furnished with every requisite which a liberal attention to the health and comfort of the crews could devise. These vessels were built on a particular construction and were purchased of Captain Hammond, of Hull. The largest was named the Resolution, of four hundred and sixty-two tons burthen, Captain James Cook, commander; the other was named the Adventure, of three hundred and sixty-six tons, Captain Tobias Furneaux, who had been promoted from the rank of lieutenant.

The Resolution had one hundred and twelve persons on board, officers included, and the Adventure eighty-one. Mr. Forster and his son, both eminent naturalists, and Mr. Wales, now mathematical master of Christ Hospital, accompanied them.

On the 13th of June, 1772, both the ships sailed from Plymouth Sound; and, on the evening of the 29th, anchored in Funchiale Road, in the Island of Madeira. At the Captain's and Mr. Forster's landing, they were received by a gentleman from the vice-consul, who conducted them to the house of Mr. Loughnans, the most considerable English merchant in the place. This gentleman not only obtained leave for Mr. Forster to search the island for plants, but procured them every thing they wanted, and insisted on their accommodating themselves at his house during their stay.

Having got on board a supply of water, wine, and other necessaries, they left Madeira on the 1st of August, and steered southward. Captain Cook now made three puncheons of beer, of the inspissated juice of malt. The proportion was about ten of water to one of juice. They stopped at St. Jago for a supply of water on the 10th, and having completed this business and got on board a supply of refreshments, such as hogs, goats, fowls, and fruit, they put to sea, and proceeded on their voyage.

On the 9th, one of the carpenter's mates fell overboard, and was drowned. He was over the side, still

in this fact, that
might be om
prise, they we
a liberal attent
ews could devise
ular constructio
mmond, of Hu
a, of four hundre
James Cook, com
venture, of thre
Tobias Furneau
k of lieutenant,
and twelve perso
Adventure eight
minent naturalis
master of Christ

the ships sail
vening of the 29th
island of Madeir
anding, they we
e-consul, who cou
ghnans, the mo
place. This gen
r. Forster to sear
n every thing the
mmodating them

water, wine, and
on the 1st of Aug
n Cook now made
spissated juice
of water to on
for a supply
eted this business
ents, such as hog
a, and proceeded

mates fell over
ver the side, and

ing on one of the scuttles; whence, it was supposed, he had fallen; for he was not seen till the very instant he sunk under the ship's stern, when all endeavours to save him were too late. This loss was sensibly felt during the voyage, as he was both a sober man, and a good workman.

At two in the afternoon, on the 29th, they made the land of the Cape of Good Hope. They had no sooner anchored in Table Bay, than they were visited by the captain of the port and Mr. Brandt. This last gentleman brought off such things as could not fail of being acceptable to persons coming from sea. The master attendant also visited them, according to custom, to take account of the ships; to enquire into the health of the crews; and, in particular, if the small-pox was aboard; a thing they dread above all others at the Cape.

It was the 18th of November before they had got ready to put to sea. During this stay the crews of both ships were served every day with fresh beef or mutton, saw-baked bread, and as much greens as they could get. The ships were caulked and painted, and in every respect put in as good a condition as when they left England.

Mr. Forster, whose whole time was taken up in the pursuit of natural history and botany, met with a Swedish gentleman, one Mr. Sparrman, who had died under Dr. Lenzus. He, by Captain Cook's consent, embarked as an assistant to Mr. Forster, who bore his expences on board, and allowed him a yearly pension besides.

In the afternoon of the 22d they weighed, and on the 25th had abundance of albatross about them, several of which were caught with hook and line, and were very well relished by many of the people, notwithstanding they were at this time served with fresh mutton. Judging that they should soon come into cold weather, the Captain ordered the men to be supplied with the dresses which had been furnished by the Admiralty.

On the 10th, the weather being hazy, they did not see an island of ice which they were steering directly for, till they were less than a mile from it. It appeared to be about fifty feet high, and half a mile in circuit. It was flat at the top, and its sides rose in a perpendicular direction, against which the sea broke exceedingly high.

On the 17th they saw many whales, one seal, penguins, and some white birds. They found the skirts of the loose ice to be more broken than usual; and it extended some distance beyond the main field, insomuch that they sailed amongst it the most part of the day; and the high ice islands without were innumerable. The weather was sensibly colder than the thermometer seemed to point out, insomuch that the whole crew complained. In order to enable them to support the better, the sleeves of their jackets were lengthened with baize; and a cap was made for each man of the same stuff, together with canvass, which proved of great service to them.

After proceeding some days through fields and islands of ice, on the 29th they came to a resolution, to run as far west as the meridian of Cape Circumcision, provided they met with no impediment, as the distance was not more than eighty leagues, the wind favourable, and the sea seemed to be pretty clear. At one o'clock they steered for an island of ice, thinking, if there was any loose ice round it, to take some on board, and convert it into fresh water. At four they brought to under the lee of the island, where they did not find what they wanted, but saw upon it eighty-six penguins. This piece of ice was about half a mile in circuit, and one hundred feet high and upwards; for they lay some minutes with every sail becalmed under it.

On the 2d of January, 1773, the weather was clear, that they might have seen land at fourteen or fifteen leagues distance. On the 5th, however, they had much snow and sleet, which, as usual, froze on their rigging as it fell; so that every rope was covered with the finest transparent ice. On the 9th they brought

... they did not
steering direct
m it. It appeared
a mile in circuit
se in a perpendic
broke exceedingly

... one seal, per
and the skirts of the
al; and it extend
ld, insomuch that
t of the day; and
nnumerable. The
the thermomete
the whole crew
them to support the
s were lengthened
or each man of the
ich proved of great

... fields and islands
resolution, to make
Circumcision, pro
nt, as the distance
the wind favourable
ar. At one o'clock
aking, if there were
on board, and con
ey brought to anchor
they did not know
eighty-six penguin
mile in circuit, and
s; for they lay
ed under it.

... the weather was
ed at fourteen o'clock
however, they
usual, froze on the
e was covered with
th they brought

... took up as much ice as yielded fifteen tons of good
sh water. The pieces taken up were hard, and
nd as a rock; some of them so large, that they were
igned to break them with pickaxes, before they could
taken into the boats.
On the 8th of February, having lost sight of the Ad-
venture, they suspected a separation had taken place,
ough they were at a loss to tell how it happened.
Captain Furneaux had been ordered by Captain Cook,
in case he was separated, to cruise three days in the
place where he last saw him; he, therefore, continued
making short boards, and firing half-hour guns, till the
in the afternoon, when the weather having cleared
up, they could see several leagues round them, and
and that the Adventure was not within the limits of
their horizon. At this time they were about two or
three leagues to the eastward of the situation they
were in when they last saw her. Next day they saw
nothing of her, notwithstanding the weather was pretty
clear, and Captain Cook had kept firing guns, and
burning false fires, all night. He therefore gave over
looking for her, made sail, and steered S. E. with a
fresh gale, accompanied with a high sea.
On the 17th, at nine in the morning, they bore down
an island of ice, which they reached by noon. It
was full half a mile in circuit, and two hundred feet
high at least; though very little loose ice about it. But
while they were considering whether or no they should
disturb boats to take some up, a great quantity broke
from the island. Of this detached part they made a
lift to get on board about nine or ten tons before eight
o'clock, when they hoisted in the boats, and made sail
to the east, inclining to the south.

On the 23d they tacked, and spent the night, which
was exceedingly stormy, thick, and hazy, with sleet
and snow, in making short boards. Surrounded on
every side with danger, they wished for day-light.
This, when it came, served only to increase their ap-
prehensions, by exhibiting to view those huge moun-

tains of ice which, in the night, they had passed without seeing.

On the 7th of March the weather became fair, the sky cleared up, and the night was remarkably pleasant as well as the morning of the next day, which, for the brightness of the sky, the serenity and mildness of the weather, gave place to none they had seen since they had left the Cape of Good Hope. It was such as little known in this sea; and, to make it still more agreeable, they had not one island of ice in sight.

On the 17th Captain Cook came to a resolution to quit the high southern latitudes, and to proceed to New Zealand, to look for the Adventure, and to refresh his people. On the 26th they steered to, and entered, Dusky Bay, about noon. In this bay they were all strangers; in Captain Cook's former voyage he only discovered and named it. After running about two leagues up the bay, and passing several of the islands which lay in it, they brought to, and hoisted out two boats; one of which was sent away, with an officer round a point on the larboard hand, to look for anchorage. This he found, and signified the same by signal. They then followed with the ship, and anchored in fifty fathoms water, so near the shore as to reach it with a hawser. They had now been one hundred and seventeen days at sea; in which time they sailed three thousand six hundred and sixty leagues, without having once sight of land,

Their first care, after the ship was moored, was to send a boat and people a fishing, in which they were very successful, returning with fish sufficient for the hands for supper; and in a few hours in the morning caught as many as served for dinner. This gave them certain hopes of being plentifully supplied with this article. Nor did the shores and woods appear less destitute of wild fowl; so that they hoped to enjoy, with ease, what, in their situation, might be called the luxuries of life. This determined them to stay some time in this bay, in order to examine it thoroughly;

ey had passed with

er became fair, the
remarkably pleasant
day, which, for the
and mildness of the
had seen since the
It was such as to
make it still more
f ice in sight.

to a resolution
and to proceed
venture, and to re-
steered to, and en-
this bay they were
ner voyage he only
running about two
several of the is-
and hosted out two
y, with an officer
to look for anchor-
the same by signal
and anchored a
ore as to reach
one hundred and
they sailed three
s, without having

as moored, was the
which the were
sufficient for a
in the morning.

This gave them
plied with this an-
appear less de-
ed to enjoy, with
t be called the

em to stay some
t thoroughly; a

one had ever landed before on any of the southern
islands of this country.

About one hundred yards from the stern was a fine
stream of fresh water. Thus situated, they began to
clear places in the woods, in order to set up the astro-
nomer's observatory, the forge, and tents for the dif-
ferent artificers. They also began to brew beer from
the branches or leaves of a tree which much resembles
American black spruce.

On the 28th, a canoe appeared, and in it seven or
eight people. They remained looking at the ship for
some time, and then returned; though signs of friend-
ship were made. After dinner the Captain took two
boats, and went in search of them. They found a
canoe hauled upon the shore, near to two small huts,
where were several fire-places, some fishing-nets, a
few fish lying on the shore, and some in the canoe, but
no people. After a short stay, and leaving in the
canoe some medals, looking-glasses, beads, &c. they
departed, and rowed to the head of the cove, where
they found nothing remarkable.

As they returned in the evening, they had a short
interview with three of the natives, one man and two
women. They were the first that discovered them-
selves on the N. E. point of *Indian Island*, named so
on this occasion. The man could not help discovering
some signs of fear, when they approached the rock
behind the boat. He, however, stood firm; nor did he
refuse to take up some things that were thrown to him.
At length, they landed, went up and embraced him;
and presented him with such articles as they had, which
soon dissipated his fears. Presently after they were
surrounded by the two women, and some of the seamen.
The sight approaching, obliged them to return; when the
youngest of the two women, whose volubility of tongue
exceeded every thing they ever met with, gave them
advice.

Next morning they made the natives another visit,
accompanied by Mr. Forster and Mr. Hodges, carrying
with them various articles, which were received with a

great deal of indifference, except hatchets and spade nails. The interview was at the same place as the night; and now they saw the whole family. It consisted of the man, his two wives, (as was supposed,) a young woman before mentioned, a boy about four years old, and three small children, the youngest of which was at the breast. They conducted them to their habitation, which was but a little way within the skirts of the wood, and consisted of two mean huts made of the bark of trees. Their canoe, which was a small double one, just large enough to transport the whole family from place to place, lay in a small cove near the huts. When they took leave, the chief presented Captain Cook with a piece of cloth or garment of their own manufacturing, and some other trifles.

On the 12th, several of the natives came and stood down on the shore, abreast of the ship. The Captain now caused the bagpipes and fife to play, and the drums to beat. The two first they did not regard, but the latter excited some little attention; nothing, however, could induce them to come on board. But they entered with great familiarity into conversation (little understood) with such of the officers and seamen as went to them, paying much greater regard to some than to others.

On the 17th, two of the natives, the chief and his daughter, ventured on board: the Captain took them both down into the cabin, where they were to breakfast; but they would not taste any of the victuals. The chief pried into every corner of the cabin, all parts of which he viewed with some surprise; but it was impossible to fix his attention to any one thing a single moment. The works of art appeared to him in the same light as those of nature, and were as far removed beyond his comprehension.

The chief, before he came on board, presented the Captain with a piece of cloth, and a green talc hatchet. To Mr. Forster he also gave a piece of cloth; and a girl gave another to Mr. Hodges. This custom of ma-

presents, before they receive any, is common with
 natives of the South Sea Islands; but they never
 it practised in New Zealand before. Of all the
 articles which were given to the chief, hatchets
 spike-nails were the most valuable in his eyes.
 the afternoon of the 21st, they went a seal hunt-
 The surf ran so high that they could only land in
 place, where they killed ten. These animals served
 purposes; the skins were made use of for the
 ing, the fat gave oil for their lamps, and the flesh
 eat. In the morning of the 23d, Mr. Pickersgill,
 Gilbert, and two others, ascended one of the
 mountains. In the evening they returned on board, and
 that, inland, nothing was to be seen but bar-
 mountains, with huge craggy precipices, disjoined
 valleys, or rather chasms, frightful to behold.
 having five geese left out of those brought from the
 of Good Hope, the Captain turned them out
 there was the greatest appearance of food and
 city. There is no doubt but that they will breed,
 may, in time, spread over the whole country, and
 answer the intention of leaving them. On the
 they had hazy weather. In the morning Captain
 set out, accompanied by Mr. Pickersgill and the
 Mr. Forsters, to explore an inlet seen the day be-
 After rowing about two leagues up it, it was
 to communicate with the sea, and to afford a
 outlet for ships bound to the north than the one
 came in by. After making this discovery, and re-
 ing themselves on broiled fish and wild fowl, they
 ut for the ship, and got on board at eleven o'clock
 ight. In this expedition they shot a number of birds
 ferent kinds.
 Having got the tents, and every other article, on
 , on the 28th they weighed with a light breeze,
 good up the bay for the new passage. In the
 ing of the 11th of May, they weighed, and stood
 o sea; and by noon they got clear of the land.
 After leaving Dusky Bay, they steered for Queen
 otte's Sound, where they expected to find the

Adventure. In this passage they met with nothing remarkable, or worthy of notice, till the afternoon of the 17th, when the sky became suddenly obscured by dense clouds, and seemed to forebode much worse. Presently after six water-spouts were seen. Four of them were between them and the land : the fifth was without them : the sixth first appeared at a distance of two or three miles from them : its progressive motion was not in a straight, but in a crooked line, and passed within fifty yards of the stern, without the feeling any of its effects. The diameter of the base of this spout was judged to be about fifty or sixty feet. From this a tube or round body was formed, by which the water, or air, or both, was carried in a spiral stream up to the clouds.

At day-light, on the 18th of May, they arrived at Queen Charlotte's Sound, where they discovered the Adventure, by the signals she made; an event which every one felt with an agreeable satisfaction. At noon Lieutenant Kemp, of the Adventure, came on board from whom they learnt, that their ship had been there about six weeks. In the evening they came to anchor in Ship Cove, near the Adventure; when Captain Furneaux came on board, and gave Captain Cook the following account of his proceedings during the separation.

On the 7th of February, 1773, in the morning, the Resolution being about two miles ahead, the weather shifting, brought on a very thick fog, so that the Adventure lost sight of her. They soon after heard her firing a four-pounder every half hour; but had no answer. In the evening it began to blow hard, and was, at intervals, more clear, but could see nothing of the Resolution, which gave them much uneasiness. They then tacked, and stood to cruise in the place where they last saw her, according to agreement in case of separation; but next day came on a very heavy gale of wind and thick weather, that obliged them to bring to, and thereby prevented their reaching the

et with nothing
the afternoon of
y obscured by d
ebo'e much w
e seen. Four
and the land;
first appeared at
them: its prog

ut in a crooked
stern, without
meter of the bar
ut fifty or sixty
s formed, by wh
ed in a spiral str

ay, they arrived
they discovered
de; an event w
tisfaction. At na
ure, came on bo
ship had been th
they came to an
enture; when C
gave Captain C
edings during u

in the morning,
ahead, the w
og, so that the
soon after hear
direction, they k
hour; but had
to blow hard,
ould see nothing
much uneasine
ruise in the p
g to agreeme
ne on a very he
at obliged them
ir reaching the

ended spot. They cruised as near the place as they could get for three days; when giving over all hopes of joining company again, they bore away for winter quarters, distant fourteen hundred leagues, through a sea entirely unknown, and reduced the allowance of water to one quart per day. They were daily attended by great numbers of sea birds, and frequently saw porpoises.

On the 1st of March they directed their course for the land laid down in their charts by the name of Van Diemen's Land, supposed to join to New Holland. On the 9th of March they saw the land bearing N. N. W. about eight or nine leagues distant. It appeared moderately high, and uneven near the sea. Here the country is hilly, and well clothed with trees: they saw no inhabitants.

The morning of the 10th of March being calm, the ship, then about four miles from land, sent the great cutter on shore, with the second lieutenant, to find if there was any harbour, or good bay. Soon after, it began to blow very hard, they made the signal for the boat to return several times, but they did not see or hear any thing of it, which gave them much uneasiness, as there was a very great sea. To their great dissatisfaction, in the afternoon, the boat returned safe. They landed, but with much difficulty; and saw several places where the Indians had been, and one they were very likely to have found, where they had a fire. The weather obliged them to return without investigating the place properly, or finding any anchorage.

On the 16th they passed Maria's Islands, so named after Tasman; they appear to be the same as the main land. The land hereabouts is much pleasanter, low, and even; but no signs of a harbour or bay, where a ship might anchor with safety. They stood to the westward for Charlotte's Sound, with a light breeze at N. W. in the morning of the 5th of April, and on the 6th they had the Sound open. As they sailed up it they saw the tops of high mountains covered with snow,

which remains all the year. On the 7th they anchored in Ship Cove, in ten fathoms water.

The two following days were employed in clearing a place on Motuara Island, for erecting tents for the sick, the sail-makers, and coopers. On the 9th they were visited by three canoes with about sixteen of the natives; and to induce them to bring fish, and other provisions, they gave them several things, with which they seemed highly pleased. One of the crew seeing something carefully wrapt up, had the curiosity to examine what it was; and, to his great surprise, found it to be the head of a man lately killed. The natives were very apprehensive of its being forced from them; and, as if sensible of their unnatural cannibalism, tried to conceal it, and to exculpate themselves from the charge. They frequently mentioned Tupia; and when they told them he was dead, some of them seemed to be very much concerned, and, as well as they could understand them, wanted to know whether he was killed, or if he died a natural death. By these questions, they are the same tribe Captain Cook saw. In the afternoon they returned again with fish and fat roots, which they sold for nails and other trifles.

On the 11th of May they felt two severe shocks of an earthquake, but received no kind of damage. On the 17th, they had the pleasure of seeing the Resolution off the mouth of the Sound. Such is the detail of Captain Furneaux's transactions during an absence of fourteen weeks.

Captain Cook knowing that scurvy-grass, celeriac, and other vegetables, were to be found in Queen Charlotte's Sound, he gave orders that they should be boiled, with wheat and portable broth, every morning for breakfast; and with pease and broth for dinner. Knowing from experience, that these vegetables, thus dressed, are extremely beneficial in removing all manner of scorbutic complaints.

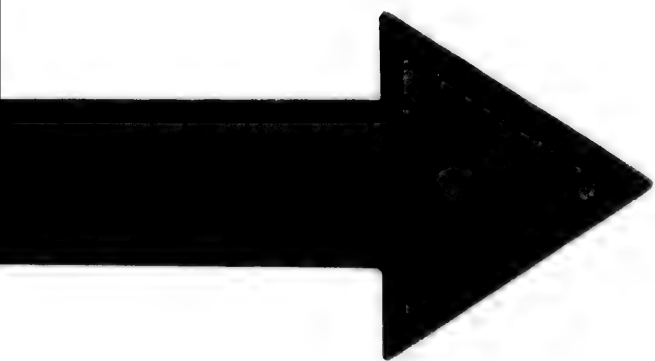
In the morning of the 20th, he sent on shore only one ewe and ram remaining of those which he had brought from the Cape of Good Hope, with an inter-

7th they anchored in this country. Soon after he visited the several gardens Captain Furneaux had caused to be made and planted with various articles; all of which were in a flourishing state, and, if attended to by the natives, may prove of great utility to them. On the 2d, in the morning, the ewe and ram he had with so much care and trouble brought to this place, were both found dead; occasioned, as was supposed, by eating some poisonous plant. Thus his hopes of stocking this country with a breed of sheep were blasted in a moment. About noon they were visited, for the first time since they arrived, by some of the natives, who dined with them; and it was not a little they desired.

In the morning of the 24th, they met a large canoe, which were fourteen or fifteen people. One of the first questions they asked, was for Tupia, the person brought from Otaheite on the former voyage; and they seemed to express some concern when they told them he was dead. One of these people Captain Cook took, and shewed him some potatoes, planted there by Mr. Pownall, master of the Endeavour. There seemed to be no doubt of their succeeding; and the man was so well pleased with them, that he, of his own accord, began to hoe the earth up about the plants. They took him to the other gardens, and shewed him the turnips, carrots, and parsnips; roots which, together with the potatoes, will be of more real use to him than any other articles they had planted. It was by giving them an idea of these roots, by comparing them with such as they knew.

On the 2d of June, the ships being nearly ready to sail, Captain Cook sent on shore two goats, male and female. Captain Furneaux also put on shore, in Anibal Cove, a boar and two breeding sows; so that there is reason to hope this country will, in time, be stocked with these animals, if they are not destroyed by the natives before they become wild; for afterwards they will be in no danger.





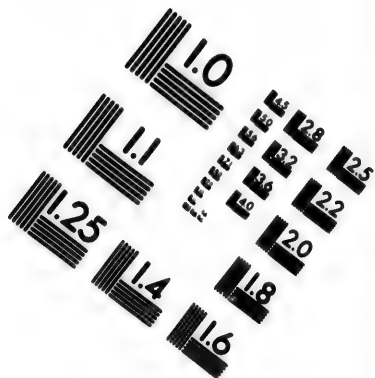
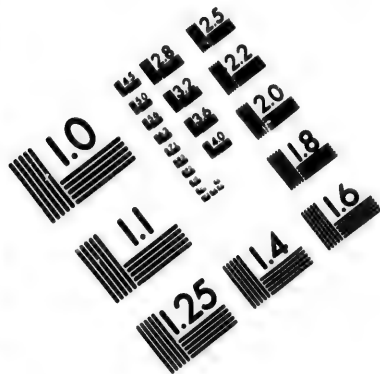
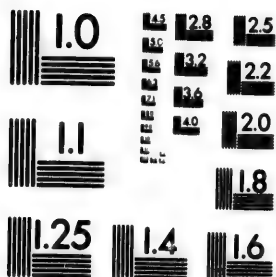


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic
Sciences
Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

18 20 22 25
E E E E E
E E E E E

10
01

Early the next morning, some of the natives brought a large supply of fish. One of them desired Captain Cook to give his son a white shirt, which he accordingly did. The boy was so fond of his new dress, that he went all over the ship, presenting himself before every one that came in his way. This freedom, used by him, offended Old Will, the ram goat, who gave him a butt with his horns, and knocked him backward on the deck. Will would have repeated his blow, had not some of the people come to the boy's assistance. The misfortune, however, seemed to him irreparable. The shirt was dirtied, and he was afraid to appear in the cabin before his father, until brought in by Mr. Forster; when he told a very lamentable story against Goury, the great dog, (for so they called all the quadrupeds that were on board;) nor could he be reconciled, till the shirt was washed, and dried.

About nine o'clock, a large double canoe, in which were twenty or thirty people, appeared in sight. The natives on board seemed much alarmed, saying that these were their enemies. Two of them, the one with a spear, and the other with a stone hatchet in his hand, mounted the arm-chests on the poop, and there, in a kind of bravado, bid those enemies defiance; while the others, who were on board, took to their canoes and went ashore, probably to secure the women and children. However, they came on board, and were very peaceable. A trade soon commenced between the sailors and them. It was not possible to hinder the former from selling the clothes from off their backs for the merest trifles. This caused Captain Cook to dismiss the strangers sooner than he would have done.

June the 4th, their royal master's birth-day, they spent in festivity, having the company of Captain Feniaux, and all his officers. Double allowance enabled the seamen to share in the general joy. On the 7th of June, at four in the morning, the wind being favorable, they unmoored, and at seven weighed, and put to sea, with the Adventure in company.

the natives brought
n desired Captain
which he accord
his new dress, tha
ing himself before
his freedom, use
m goat, who gav
ked him backward
eated his blow, ha
he boy's assistance
to him irreparable
afraid to appear
brought in by Ma
ntable story again
called all the que
could he be reco
d dried.

le canoe, in whic
eared in sight. Th
alarmed, saying th
f them, the one wa
hatchet in his han
op, and there, in
ies defiance; wh
took to their cano
ture the women a
on board, and we
ommenced betwe
ossible to hinder
n off their backs
Captain Cook to d
ould have done.
er's birth-day, th
any of Captain F
e allowance enabl
joy. On the 7th
e wind being save
weighed, and p
pany.

Nothing material occurred till the 29th, when Cap-
Cook was informed that the crew of the *Adven-
e* was sickly, and this he found was but too true.
er cook was dead, and about twenty of her best men
re down in the scurvy and flux. At this time his
o had only three men on the sick list, and only one
them attacked with the scurvy. Several more,
ever, began to shew symptoms of it, and were put
on the wort, marmalade of carrots, rob of lemons
and oranges.

The sickly state of the *Adventure's* crew made it
necessary to make their best way to Otaheite, where
y were sure of finding refreshments: consequently
y continued their course to the west; and at six
lock in the evening, land was seen from the mast-
ed, bearing west by south. Captain Cook called it
Doubtful Island: the getting to a place where they
uld procure refreshments was more an object at this
e than discovery.

At day break, on the 12th, they discovered land
t ahead, distant about two miles; so that day-light
ied them of their danger but just in time. This
ved another of those low or half drowned islands, or
er a large coral shoal, of about twenty leagues in
uit. The next morning, at four, they made sail,
at day-break saw another of these low islands,
ch obtained the name of *Adventure Island*. M. de
gainville very properly calls this cluster of low
flowed isles, the *Dangerous Archipelago*. The
othness of the sea sufficiently convinced them that
y were surrounded by them, and how necessary it
to proceed with the utmost caution, especially in
night.

On the 15th, at five o'clock in the morning, they
Osnaburg Island, or Maitea, discovered by Cap-
Wallis. Soon after they brought to, and waited
the *Adventure* to come up with them, to acquaint
tain Furneaux, that it was his intention to put into
a-piha Bay, in Otaheite, in order to get what re-
aments they could from that part of the island, be-

fore they went down to Matavia. This done, they made sail, and at six in the evening saw the island bearing west. As they approached the coast, a number of the inhabitants came off in canoes from different parts, bringing with them a little fish, a few coconuts, and other fruits, which they exchanged for nails and beads. Most of them knew Captain Cook again, and many enquired for Mr. Banks, and others who were with him before; but not one asked for Tupia.

Next morning, being the 17th, they anchored in Oaita-piha Bay, about two cable-length from the shore, both ships being by this time crowded with a great number of the natives, who brought with them coconuts, plantains, bananas, apples, yams, and other roots, which they exchanged for nails and beads. To several who called themselves chiefs, Captain Cook made presents of shirts, axes, and several other articles; and in return, they promised to bring hogs and fowls; a promise they never did, nor ever intended, to perform.

Many, who called themselves earees, or chiefs, came on board, partly with a view of getting presents, and partly to pilfer whatever came in their way. One of this sort of earees the Captain had most of the day in the cabin, and made presents to him, and all his friends, which were not a few. At length he was caught taking things which did not belong to him, and handed them out at the quarter gallery. Many complaints of the like nature were made to him against those on deck, which occasioned his turning them all out of the ship. The cabin guest made good haste to be gone. The Captain was so much exasperated at his behaviour, that, after he had got some distance from the ship, he fired two muskets over his head, which made him quit the canoe, and take to the water. He then sent a boat to take up the canoe; and ordered a great gun, loaded with ball, to be fired along the coast, which made the natives retire from the shore. A few hours after they were all good friends again. It was not till the evening of this day, that any one enquired after Tupia, and then but two or three. As soon as they learnt

a. This done, the
ning saw the island
the coast, a number
ances from different
e fish, a few coconuts
exchanged for manna
Captain Cook again
ks, and others who
e asked for Tupia.
n, they anchored at
length from the shore
crowded with a great
ht with them coconuts
ams, and other roots
beads. To several
ia Cook made present
ther articles; and
s and fowls; a present
nded, to perform
rees, or chiefs, came
etting presents, and
their way. One day
most of the day
m, and all his friends
he was caught
o him, and handed
Many complaints
im against these
them all out of
od haste to be gone
ted at his behavior
e from the ship,
which made him
He then sent a boat
a great gun, loaded
ast, which made
A few hours after
It was not till
nquired after Tupia
oon as they learned

the cause of his death, they were quite satisfied; indeed, it did not appear to them that it would have caused a moment's uneasiness in the breast of any one, had his death been occasioned by any other means than by sickness.

Nothing worthy of note happened on the 20th, till the dusk of the evening, when one of the natives made off with a musket belonging to the guard on shore. Captain Cook was present when this happened, and sent some of his people after him, which would have been to little purpose, had not some of the natives, of their own accord, pursued the thief. They knocked him down, took from him the musket, and brought it back. Fear, on this occasion, certainly operated more with them than principle. They, however, deserve to be applauded for this act of justice.

In the evening, Captain Cook was informed that Waheatoua was come into the neighbourhood, and wanted to see him. In consequence of this information, he determined to wait one day longer, in order to have an interview with this prince. Accordingly, early the next morning, he set out, in company with Captain Furneaux, Mr. Forster, and several of the natives. They found him seated on a stool, with a circle of people round him. They knew each other at first sight, though they had not met since 1769. At that time he was but a boy, and went by the name of Tearee; but upon the death of his father, Waheatoua, he took upon him that name.

After the first salutation was over, having seated the Captain on the same stool with himself, and the other gentlemen on the ground by them, he began to enquire after several by name, who were engaged in the former voyage. He next enquired how long they would stay; and when he told him no longer than the next day, he seemed sorry; asked the Captain to stay some months, and at last came down to five days; promising in that time he should have hogs in a plenty. But as he had been here already a week, without so much as getting one, he could not put any faith in this

promise. In return for the present he received, he ordered a pretty good hog to be carried to their boat.

Before they got to an anchor, their decks were crowded with the natives; many of whom Captain Cook knew, and almost all of them knew him. A great crowd was assembled together upon the shore, amongst whom was Otoo, their king. The Captain was just going to pay him a visit, when he was told he was mataow'd, and gone to Oparee.

He set out on the 26th for Oparee, accompanied by Captain Furneaux, Mr. Forster, and others. As soon as they landed, they were conducted to Otoo, whom they found seated on the ground, under the shade of a tree, with an immense crowd round him. After the first compliments were over, the Captain presented him with such articles as were supposed to be most valuable in his eyes, well knowing that it was his interest to gain the friendship of this man. He also made presents to several of his attendants; and, in return, they offered him cloth, which he refused to accept, telling them that what he had given was for *tiou*, (friendship.) The king enquired for Tupia, and all the gentlemen that were with the Captain in his former voyage, by name. He promised that they should have some hogs the next day; but he had much ado to obtain a promise from him to visit him on board. He said he was, *Mataou no te paupoue*; that is, afraid of the guns. He was about thirty years of age, six feet high, and a fine, personable, well made man. All his subjects appeared uncovered before him, his father not excepted. What is meant by uncovering, is the making bare the head and shoulders, or wearing no sort of clothing above the breast.

On the 27th, Otoo, attended by a numerous train, paid them a visit. He first sent into the ship a large quantity of cloth, fruits, a hog, and two large fish; and, after some persuasion, came on board himself, with his sister, a younger brother, and several more attendants. Among other presents distributed on this occasion, Captain Furneaux presented the king with

he received, brought to their boat. Their decks were crowded with many of whom Captain Cook knew him. As they came upon the shore, the Captain said, "The Captain when he was told he

was accompanied by others. As soon as he came to Otoo, whom he met under the shade of a tree, he said to him. After the Captain presented himself, he proposed to be most obliged that it was his intention. He also made him a present; and, in return, he refused to accept; but when he was for tying up Tupia, and all the other natives, the Captain in his former rage, they should have much ado to observe on board. He said he was afraid of the natives, six feet high, and of his submission. All his submission, his father notwithstanding, is the making bearing no sort of

numerous train, the ship a large number of two large fish; on board himself, and several more distributed on this side the king with

fine goats, male and female, which will no doubt multiply.

Early in the morning of the 28th, they had another visit from Otoo, who brought more cloth, a pig, and some fruit. His sister, who was with him, and some of his attendants, came on board: but he and others went to the Adventure, with the like presents to Captain Furneaux. It was not long before he returned with Captain Furneaux on board the Resolution, when Captain Cook made him a handsome return for the presents he had brought him, and dressed his sister out in the best manner he could. When Otoo came into the cabin, Ereti, and some of his friends, were sitting there. The moment they saw the king enter, they slipped themselves in great haste, being covered before. This was all the respect they paid him; for they never rose from their seats, nor made any other obeisance. When the king thought proper to depart, he was carried to Oparre in a boat; when Captain Cook entertained him, and his people, with the bagpipes, (of which music they were very fond,) and dancing by the seamen. He, in return, ordered some of his people to dance also, which consisted chiefly of contractions.

At ten o'clock the following evening, they were alarmed with the cry of murder, and a great noise on shore, near the bottom of the bay, at some distance from the encampment. Captain Cook suspected that it was occasioned by some of his own people; and immediately ordered a boat, and sent it ashore, which soon returned with three marines, and a seaman. Some others belonging to the Adventure, were also taken, and being all put under confinement, the next morning the Captain ordered them to be punished according to their deserts. He did not find that any mischief was done, and the people would confess nothing. The natives, however, were so much alarmed, that they fled from their habitations in the dead of the night, and the alarm spread many miles along the coast: for when Captain Cook went to visit Otoo, in the morning, by appoint-

ment, he found him removed, or rather fled, many miles from the place of his abode. Even there he was obliged to wait some hours, before he could see him at all; and when he did, he complained of the last night's riot. As this was intended to be the last visit, Captain Cook had taken with him a present suitable to the occasion. Among other things were three Cape sheep which he had seen before, and asked for. He was much pleased with them; though he could be but little benefited, as they were all wethers. The presents he got at this interview entirely removed his fears, and opened his heart so much, that he sent for three hogs, which he presented to them. They now took leave, and informed him they should quit the island the next day, at which he seemed much affected, and embraced the Captain several times.

On the 1st of September the ships unmoored. Some hours before they got under sail, a young man, whose name was Poreo, came, and desired the Captain would take him with him, to which he consented. Many more offered themselves, but he refused to take them. This youth asked for an axe and a spike-nail for his father, who was then on board. He had them accordingly; and they parted just as they were getting under sail, more like two strangers than father and son. This raised a doubt whether it was so; which was farther confirmed by a canoe, coming along-side, as they were standing out of the bay, and demanding the young man in the name of Otoo. The artifice was now seen through; it was merely to extort something from the Captain that Poreo had volunteered it. However, he was given to understand, that unless he returned the axe and nails, he could not be dismissed. As these were on shore, he was carried away, pretty well satisfied; though a few tears fell when he viewed the land astern.

As soon as they were clear of the bay, they directed their course for the Island of Huaheine, where they intended to touch: on the morning of the 3d, they anchored in the harbour of Owharre. As soon as the

rather fled, man
Even there he w
he could see him
ed of the last night
the last visit, Cap
esent suitable to
e three Cape shee
asked for. He w
e could be but litt
The presents he g
his fears, and opene
or three hogs, whic
took leave, and
island the next day
and embraced th
s unmoored. Some
young man, wh
the Captain wou
consented. Man
fused to take them
a spike-nail for
e had them accord
were getting under
her and son. Thi
which was farther
side, as they were
anding the young
fice was now seen
omething from the
it. However, he
s he returned the
missed. As the
pretty well satisf
e viewed the land
ay, they directed
eine, where they
of the 3d, they
As soon as the

ps were in safety, Captain Cook landed with Cap-
a Furneaux, and was received by the natives with
the utmost cordiality. Some presents were distributed
among them; and presently after, they brought down
hogs, fowls, dogs, and fruits, which they willingly ex-
changed for hatchets, nails, and beads. The like trade
was soon opened on board the ship; so that they had a
prospect of being plentifully supplied with fresh
meat and fowls; and, to people in their situation, this
was no unwelcome thing.

Early the next morning, Lieutenant Pickersgill sailed
with a cutter, on a trading party, toward the south
end of the isle. This gentleman had seen Oberea
while they lay at Otaheite, who was now decrepid and
sick. Captain Cook also sent another trading party on
shore near the ships, with which he went himself, to
see that it was properly conducted at the first setting
out, a very necessary point to be attended to.

On the 4th Captain Cook wanted to go to Oree, the
chief, but was told he would come to him; which he
accordingly did, fell upon his neck, and embraced him.
This was by no means ceremonious; the tears, which
trickled plentifully down his venerable old cheeks, suf-
ficiently bespoke the language of his heart. His friends
were also introduced to them, to whom they made
presents. In return he gave them a hog, and a quan-
tity of cloth, promising that all their wants should be
supplied.

On the 7th, early in the morning, while the ships
were unmooring, Captain Cook went to pay his fare-
well visit to Oree, accompanied by Captain Furneaux
and Mr. Forster. They took with them, for a present,
such things as were not only valuable, but useful. He
left with him the inscription plate he had before in
keeping, and another small copper-plate, on which
were engraved these words, "Anchored here, his
Majesty's ships Resolution and Adventure,
September 1773;" together with some medals, all put
in a bag; of which the chief promised to take care,
and to produce to the first ship or ships that should arrive

at the island. He then gave a hog ; and after loading the boat with fruit, they took leave ; when the good old chief embraced the Captain with tears in his eyes.

Before they quitted this island, Captain Furneaux agreed to receive on board his ship a young man named Omai, a native of Ulieta, where he had some property of which he had been dispossessed by the people of Bolabola. Captain Cook wondered that Captain Furneaux would encumber himself with this man, who, in his opinion, was not a proper sample of the inhabitants of these happy islands, not having any advantage of birth or acquired rank, nor being eminent in shape, figure, or complexion. The Captain, however, after his arrival in England, was convinced of his error ; and doubted whether any other of the natives would have given more general satisfaction by his behaviour among them. " Omai, (observed Captain Cook,) has certainly a very good understanding, quick parts, and honest principles ; he is of good natural behaviour, which renders him acceptable to the best of company ; and a proper degree of pride, which taught him to avoid the society of persons of inferior rank. He has passions of the same kind as other young men, but has judgment enough not to indulge them in any improper degree. I do not imagine that he has any dislike to liquor ; and he had fallen into company where the person who drank the most, met with the most approbation, I have no doubt but that he would have endeavoured to gain the applause of those with whom he associated ; but, fortunately for him, he perceived that drinking was very little in use but among inferior people ; and as he was very watchful into the manners and conduct of the persons of rank who honoured him with their protection, he was sober and modest ; and I never heard that during the whole time of his stay in England, which was two years, he ever once disguised himself with wine, or ever shewed an inclination to go beyond the strictest rules of moderation.

" Soon after his arrival in London, the Earl of Sandwich, the first lord of the admiralty, introduced him

and after loading
 re; when the great
 tears in his eyes
 Captain Furner
 young man named
 had some property
 by the people
 that Captain F
 this man, who,
 of the inhabitants
 advantage of his
 in shape, figure
 ver, after his arriv
 error; and doubt
 would have given mo
 iour among the
) has certainly
 ts, and honest pri
 our, which render
 ny; and a propo
 to avoid the socie
 has passions of
 but has judgme
 improper degree.
 ce to liquor; and
 e person who dra
 robatation, I have
 avoured to gain
 sociated; but, fo
 drinking was ve
 e; and as he w
 conduct of the pe
 th their protectio
 never heard the
 n England, whic
 uised himself w
 to go beyond the

the Earl of Sandwich
 introduced him

to Majesty at Kew, when he met with a most gra-
 cious reception, and imbibed the strongest impression of
 duty and gratitude to that great and amiable Prince,
 which I am persuaded he will preserve to the latest mo-
 ment of his life. During his stay among us, he was
 pressed by many of the principal nobility, and did
 nothing to forfeit the esteem of any one of them; but
 his principal patrons were the Earl of Sandwich, Mr.
 Banks, and Dr. Solander; the former probably thought
 it a duty of his office to protect and countenance an in-
 habitant of that hospitable country, where the wants
 and distresses of those in his department had been alle-
 viated and supplied in the most ample manner; the
 others, as a testimony of their gratitude for the gene-
 rous reception they had met with during their residence
 in his country. It is to be observed, that though
 I had lived in the midst of amusements during his resi-
 dence in England, his return to his native country was
 always in his thoughts; and though he was not impa-
 tient to go, he expressed a satisfaction as the time of
 his return approached. He embarked with me in the
 resolution, when she was fitted out for another voy-
 age, loaded with presents from his several friends, and
 full of gratitude for the kind reception and treatment
 he had experienced among us."

On the 8th of September they anchored at Ulieta,
 and a trade soon commenced with the natives. Next
 morning they paid a formal visit to Oreo, the chief of
 his part of the isle, carrying with them the necessary
 presents. He was seated in his own house, which
 stood near the water side, where he and his friends re-
 ceived them with great cordiality. He expressed much
 satisfaction at seeing Captain Cook again, and desired
 that they might exchange names, which he accordingly
 agreed to. This is the strongest mark of friendship
 they can shew to a stranger. After they had made
 the chief and his friends the necessary presents, they
 went on board with a hog, and some fruit, received
 from him in return. On the 16th Captain Cook
 was told that his Otaheitean young man, Poreo, had

taken a resolution to leave him, and was actually gone; having met with a young woman, for whom he had contracted a friendship, he went away with her and he saw him no more. However, the Otaheite youth's leaving Captain Cook proved of no consequence, as many young men of this island voluntarily offered to come away with them: he thought proper to take on board one, who was about seventeen or eighteen years of age, named Oedidee, a native of Labola, and a near relation of Opoony, chief of the island.

After leaving Ulietea on the 17th of September they steered to the west, and on the 1st of October they saw Middleburg. As they approached the shore two canoes came boldly alongside, and some of the natives entered the ship without hesitation. This marked confidence gave Captain Cook a good opinion of the islanders, and determined him to visit them if possible. They found good anchorage, and came to in twenty-five fathoms water. They had scarcely got to an anchor before they were surrounded by a great number of canoes full of people, who began a traffic. Among them was a chief, named Tioony, to whom the Captain made a present of a hatchet, spike-nail, and several other articles, with which he was highly pleased.

Soon after, a party of them embarked in two boats, in company with Tioony, who conducted them to a little creek formed by the rocks, right abreast of the ship, where landing was extremely easy, and the boats were secure against the surf. Here they found an immense crowd of people, who welcomed them on shore with loud acclamations. Not one of them had so much as a stick, or any other weapon in his hand; an indubitable sign of their pacific intentions. They thronged thick round the boats with cloth and matting, to exchange for nails, that it was some time before they could get room to land. Many who could not get near the boats, threw into them, over the others' heads, whole bales of cloth, and then retired, without either asking or waiting to get any thing in return. The chief

and was actual
oman, for whom
ent away with
ver, the Otaheite
ved of no coun
is island volunt
e thought proper
about seventeen
dee, a native of
poony, chief of the

7th of September
the 1st of October
approached the shore
and some of the na
ation. This mark
ood opinion of the
isit them if possib
came to in 'twent
ely got to an anch
great number of c
affic. Among the
m the Captain ma
, and several oth
leased.

arked in two boats
ted them to a lim
abreast of the ship
, and the boats
found an immen
hem on shore wa
em had so much
hand; an indubit
They thronged
nd matting, to e
time before the
could not get ne
the others' head
red, without eith
return. The ch

nducted them to his house, about three hundred
ards from the sea, at the head of a fine lawn, and
nder the shade of some shaddock trees. The situa-
on was most delightful. In front was the sea, and the
hips at anchor; behind, and on each side, were plan-
ations, in which were some of the richest productions
nature. The floor was laid with mats, on which
ey were placed, and the people seated themselves in
circle round them on the outside. Having the bag-
pes with them, Captain Cook ordered them to be
ayed; and in return, the chief directed three young
omen to sing a song, which they did with a very good
ace; and having made each of them a present, this
mediately set all the women in the circle a singing.
their songs were musical and harmonious. Bananas
d cocoa nuts were set before them to eat; and a
owl of liquor prepared in their presence, of the juice
Eava, for them to drink. But Captain Cook was
e only one who tasted it; the manner of brewing it
aving quenched the thirst of every one else. The
owl was, however, soon emptied of its contents by
e natives.

They returned on board to dinner, with the chief in
eir company. He sat at table, but eat nothing; which,
they had fresh pork roasted, was a little extraordi-
ry. Near some of the houses, and in the lanes that di-
ded the plantations, were running about some hogs
d very large fowls, which were the only domestic
imals they saw; and these they did not seem willing
part with, which determined them to leave this
ace. As soon as the Captain was on board, they made
d down to Amsterdam. Opening the west side of
e isle, they were met by several canoes, each con-
ected by three or four men. They came boldly along-
e, presented them with some Eava root, and then
me on board, without farther ceremony, inviting
em by all the friendly signs they could make to go to
eir island, and pointing to the place where they
ould anchor.

Having secured the ships, Captain Cook landed, accompanied by Captain Furneaux, Mr. Forster, and several of the officers; having along with them a chief or person of some note, whose name was Attago, who had attached himself to the Captain from the first moment of his coming on board, which was before they anchored. After walking a little way into the country, they returned to the landing-place, and there found Mr. Wales in a laughable, though distressed situation. The boats which brought them on shore not being able to get near the landing-place, for want of sufficient depth for water, he pulled off his shoes and stockings to walk through, and as soon as he got on dry land, he put them down betwixt his legs to put on again, but they were instantly snatched away by a person behind him, who immediately mixed with the crowd. It was impossible for him to follow the man barefooted over the sharp coral rocks, which composed the shore, without having his feet cut to pieces. The boat was put back to the ship, his companions had each made his way through the crowd, and he left in that condition alone. The chief soon found out the thief and recovered his shoes and stockings, and of his own accord conducted them to a plantation hard by, and shewed them a pool of fresh water, though they had not made the least enquiry after any.

One of the natives having got into the master's cabin took out some books, and other things. He was discovered just as he was getting out into his canoe, and pursued by one of their boats, which obliged him to quit the canoe, and take to the water. The people in the boat made several attempts to lay hold of him, but he, as often, dived under the boat, and at last in shipping the rudder, he got clear off. Some other very daring thefts were committed at the landing-place. One fellow took a seaman's jacket out of the boat, and carried it off in spite of all the people in her. The rest of the natives, who were very numerous, took very little notice of the whole transaction; nor were they at least alarmed when the man was fired at.

Cook landed, accompanied by Mr. Forster, and with them a chief named Attago, who was the first man seen from the first morning was before they went into the country, and there was a high distressed situation of the natives on shore, for want of food, and they took off their shoes and went barefooted as he got on shore, he put his legs to put them away by a person mixed with them to follow the natives, which composed them out to pieces. The companions had each a canoe, and he left in the canoe and out the thief, and of his own nation hard by, although they had the master's canoe. He was drawn into his canoe, and which obliged him to go. The people lay hold of him, and at last some other vessel. The landing-place of the boat, and in her. The natives, took no notice nor were they at.

Attago visited Captain Cook again the next morning, and brought with him a hog, and assisted him in purchasing several more. This day the Captain was told by the officers who were on shore, that a far greater man than any they had yet seen was come to pay them a visit. Mr. Pickersgill informed them that he had seen him in the country, and found that he was a man of some consequence, by the extraordinary respect paid to him by the people. Some, when they approached him, fell on their faces, and put their heads between their feet; and no one durst pass him without permission. The Captain found him seated near the landing-place with so much sullen and stupid gravity, that, notwithstanding what had been told him, he really took him for an idiot, whom the people, from some superstitious notions, were ready to worship. He saluted and spoke to him; but he neither answered, nor did he alter a single feature in his countenance. This confirmed him in his opinion; and he was just going to leave him, when one of the natives undertook to unperceive him; which he did in such a manner, as left no room to doubt that he was the king, or principal man of the island. Accordingly he made him a present, which consisted of a shirt, an axe, a piece of red cloth, a looking glass, some nails, medals, and beads. He received these things, or rather suffered them to be put upon him, and laid by him, without losing a bit of his gravity, speaking one word, or turning his head either to the right or left; sitting the whole time like a statue; in which situation he left him to return on board, and he soon after retired. The Captain had not been long on board, before word was brought that a quantity of provision had come from this chief. A boat was sent to bring it from the shore; and it consisted of about twenty baskets of roasted bananas, sour bread and yams, and a roasted pig of about twenty pounds weight. The bearers said it was a present from the king, that is the king of the island, to the arieeke of the ship. After this they were no longer to doubt

the dignity of this sullen chief, whose name was Raghaghee-too-Fallangou.

The Captain again went on shore, and made the great man a suitable return, and immediately prepared for quitting the place. At ten o'clock they got under sail. The supplies they got at this isle were about one hundred and fifty pigs, twice that number of fowls, and many bananas and cocoa-nuts as they could find room for, with a few yams; and had their stay been longer they, no doubt, might have got a great deal more.

On leaving these islands, they made sail to the southward; it being Captain's Cook's intention to proceed directly to Queen Charlotte's Sound in New Zealand, there to take in wood and water, and then to go on farther discoveries to the south and east. He was very desirous of having some intercourse with the natives of this country, about Poverty or Tolaga Bays, where he apprehended they were more civilized than at Queen Charlotte's Sound, in order to give them some hogs, fowls, seeds, and roots, which he had provided for the purpose. They arrived on the 21st; and passing Cape Kidnappers, they saw some canoes put off from the shore. Upon this they brought to, in order to give them time to come on board.

Those in the first canoe, which came along-side, were fishers, and exchanged some fish for pieces of cloth and nails. In the next were two men, who, by their dress and behaviour, seemed to be chiefs. These two were easily prevailed on to come on board, when they were presented with nails, and other articles. They were so fond of nails, as to seize on all they could find, and with such eagerness, as plainly shewed they were the most valuable things they could give them. To the principal of these two men Captain Cook gave the pigs, fowls, seeds, and roots. At first, he did not think it was meant to give them to him; for he took but little notice of them, till he was satisfied they were for himself; nor was he then in such rapture as when he gave him a spike-nail half the length of his arm. However, at his going away, the Captain took notice that he took

ose name was Re

re, and made the
mediately prepared
ck they got under
le were about one
mber of fowls, and
ey could find room
stay been longer
at deal more.

e sail to the south
ention to proceed
in New Zealand
and then to go on
st. He was very
with the natives of
a Bays, where he
d than at Queen
them some hog
e had provided
the 21st; and
some canoes put
y brought to, in
board.

came along-side
sh for pieces of
o men, who, by
be chiefs. These
on board, when
d other articles
on all they could
nly shewed they
could give them.
tain Cook gave
he did not think
he took but little
y were for him-
as when he gave
rm. However,
ice that he took

to have them all collected together, and kept a
shful eye over them, lest any should be taken away.
made a promise not to kill any; and if he keeps
word, and proper care is taken of them, there were
gh to stock the whole island in due time.

They now stretched to the southward; presently
violent weather came on, and for two days they
beating up against a hard gale. When they ar-
just in sight of port, they had the mortification to
driven off from the land by a furious storm. They
inued to combat tempestuous weather till the 30th,
when they lost sight of the Adventure. In the afternoon
gale abated. Captain Cook now regretted the loss of

for had she been with him, he should have
n up all thoughts of going to Queen Charlotte's
nd to wood and water, and to have sought for a place
et these articles farther south, as the wind was now
ourable for ranging along the coast. But their sepa-
on made it necessary for them to repair to the
nd, that being the place of rendezvous. As they
roached the land, they saw smoke in several places
g the shore; a sure sign that the coast was in-
dited. They continued to stand to the eastward all
ut, in hopes of meeting with the Adventure in the
orning; but in this they were disappointed, and
n encountered another storm. After a succession of
ns and brisk gales, in tracing the coast, they disco-
ed on the east side of Cape Teerawhitte, a new
t they had never observed before, into which they
ered, and cast anchor.

Immediately on their anchoring, several of the na-
es came off in their canoes; two from one shore, and
from the other. It required but little address to
three or four of them on board. These people were
ravagantly fond of nails, above every other thing.
one man the Captain gave two cocks and two hens,
ich he received with so much indifference, as gave
he hopes he would take proper care of them. They
not been at anchor here above two hours, before

the wind veered to N. E. with which they weighed and steered for the Sound, where they arrived just dark, with most of their sails split.

The next morning, the 3d of November, the weather abated, and was succeeded by a few hours calm; and that a breeze sprung up at N. W. with which they weighed, and ran up into Ship Cove, where they did not find the Adventure, as was expected. The first thing they did, after mooring the ship, was to unlash the sails, there not being one but what wanted repair. In the afternoon, they gave orders for all the empty water casks to be landed, and tents to be set up for sail-makers, coopers, and others, whose business made it necessary for them to be on shore. The next day they began to caulk the ship's sides and decks, to overhaul her rigging, repair the sails, cut wood for fuel, and set up the smith's forge to repair the iron-work, of which were absolutely necessary.

Here they saw the youngest of the two sows Captain Furneaux had put on shore in Cannibal Cove, where they were last here; it was lame of one of its hind legs, otherwise in good case, and very tame. If they understood these people right, the boar and other swine were also taken away, and separated, but not killed. They were likewise told, that the two goats they had put on shore up the Sound had been killed. Thus, their endeavours to stock this country with useful animals were likely to be frustrated by the very people they meant to serve. The gardens had fared somewhat better. Every thing in them, except the potatoes, they had left entirely to nature, who had acted in part so well, that they found most articles in a flourishing state; a proof that the winter must have been mild. The potatoes had most of them been dug up, some, however, still remained, and were growing again, and, it is probable, they will never be out of the ground.

The next morning, the Captain sent over to the cove, where the natives resided, to haul the seine; and

which they weighed
they arrived just

November, the
hours calm; and
V. with which
re, where they
expected. The
ship, was to un-
what wanted re-
s for all the em-
to be set up for
whose business
e. The next day
and decks, to cut
cut wood for
the iron-work;

the two sows Cap-
annibal Cove, with
of one of its kind
very tame. If the
boar and other
ed, but not killed
two goats they
killed. Thus,
y with useful
by the very peo-
had fared some-
cept the potato-
who had acted
articles in a flour-
must have been
them been dug up
d were growing
er be out of the

sent over to the
haul the seine; and

with him a boar and a young sow, two cocks and
hens, they had brought from the isles. These he
to the natives, being persuaded they would take
er care of them, by their keeping Captain Fur-
x's sow near five months. When they were pur-
ing fish of these people, they shewed a great incli-
on to pick pockets, and to take away the fish with
hand, which they had just sold or bartered with
other. This evil one of the chiefs undertook to re-
ve, and with fury in his eyes, made a shew of
ping the people at a proper distance. The Captain
s, "I applauded his conduct, but at the same time
so good a look out, as to detect him in picking my
ket of a handkerchief, which I suffered him to put
his bosom before I seemed to know any thing of the
ter, and then told him what I had lost. He seemed
e ignorant and innocent, till I took it from him;
then he put it off with a laugh, acting his part
h so much address, that it was hardly possible for
to be angry with him; so that we remained good
nds, and he accompanied me on board to dinner."
out that time they were visited by several strangers
four or five canoes.

In unpacking the bread, four thousand two hundred
and ninety-two pounds they found totally unfit to eat,
and about three thousand pounds more could only be
ten by people in their situation. The 15th being a
easant morning, a party went over to East Bay, and
mbled one of the hills, which overlooked the eastern
art of the strait, in order to look for the Adventure.
they had a fatiguing walk to little purpose; for when
ev came to the summit, they found the eastern hori-
n so foggy, that they could not see above two miles.
Mr. Forster, who was one of the party, profited by
his excursion, in collecting some new plants. They
ow began to despair of seeing the Adventure any more,
and were totally at a loss to conceive what had befallen
er.

At an early hour in the morning of the 22d, they
were visited by a number of the natives, in four or five

canoes, very few of whom they had seen before. They brought with them various articles, which they bartered. At first, the exchanges were very much in the sailors' favour, till an old man, who was no stranger, came and assisted his countrymen with his advice; and in a moment, turned the trade above a thousand per cent. against them.

Having now put the ship in a condition for sea, to encounter the southern latitudes, the tents were struck, and every thing got on board; but calm winds from the north, all day, on the 2^d, hindered them from putting to sea, as intended. In the afternoon, some of the officers went on shore, to amuse themselves among the natives, where they saw the head and bowels of a youth, who had lately been killed, lying on the beach; and the heart stuck on a forked stick, which was fixed to the head of one of the largest canoes. One of the gentlemen bought the head, and brought it on board, where a piece of the flesh was broiled, and eaten by one of the natives, before all the officers, and most of the men. Captain Cook was on shore at the same time; but soon after returning on board, was informed of the above circumstances; and found the quarter-deck crowded with the natives, and the mangled head, or rather part of it, lying on the taffrail. The skull had been broken on the left side, just above the temples; and the remains of the face had all the appearance of a youth under twenty. The sight of the head, and the relation of the above circumstances, struck him with horror, and filled his mind with indignation against these cannibals. Curiosity, however, got the better of his indignation, especially when he considered that would avail but little; and being desirous of becoming an eye witness of a fact which many doubted, he ordered a piece of the flesh to be broiled, and brought to the quarter-deck, where one of these cannibals ate it with surprising avidity. This had such an effect on some of the sailors as to make them sick. This youth was killed in a skirmish between two parties.

and seen before. s, which they ba e very much in who was no stran ith his advice; w above a thousand

condition for sea, des, the tents board; but calm e 2 d, hindered . In the aftern to amuse them saw the head een killed, lying a forked stick, w the largest can head, and broug ash was broiled, all the officers, was on shore at board, was inform found the quar the mangled he tafferal. The sh just above the te had all the appe e sight of the he stances, struck indignation aga , got the better considered that sirsous of becom y doubted, he ed, and brought se cannibals eat uch an effect sick. This you parties.

the 25th they weighed with a small breeze. The ing, before they sailed, Captain Cook wrote a me- odum, setting forth the time he arrived, the day led, the route he intended to take, and such other nation as he thought necessary for Captain Fur- e, in case he should put into the Sound; and bu- it in a bottle under the root of a tree in the gar- in such a manner as must have been found by or any European who might put into the cove. y one being unanimously of opinion that the Ad- are could neither be stranded on the coast, nor be y of the harbours thereof, they gave up looking er, and all thoughts of seeing her any more during oyage, as no rendezvous was absolutely fixed upon leaving New Zealand.

On the 14th of December, they fell in with several islands of ice, and, about noon, with a quantity ose ice, through which they sailed. Gray alba- es, blue peterels, pintadoes, and fulmers, were

As they advanced with a fresh gale at west, found the number of ice islands increase fast, also nsiderable quantity of loose ice. They tacked, ched to the north, and soon got clear of it, but before they had received several hard knocks from arger pieces, which, with all their care, they could avoid. After clearing one danger, they still had her to encounter; the weather remained foggy, many large islands lay in their way. One they e very near falling aboard of; and if it had hap- ed, this circumstance would never have been relat- These difficulties determined them to get more to north.

On the 21st, they very suddenly got in amongst a er of very large ice islands, and a vast quantity of e pieces; and as the fog was exceedingly thick, it with the utmost difficulty they wore clear of them. the 23d, the wind being pretty moderate, and the smooth, they brought to at the outer edge of the hoisted out two boats, and sent to take some up. snow froze on the rigging as it fell, making the

ropes like wires, and the sails like boards or plate metal.

On the 30th of January, 1774, very early in morning, they perceived the clouds, over the horizon to the south, to be of an unusual snow-white brightness, which they knew denoted their approach to a field of ice. Soon after they were close to its edge, which extended east and west, far beyond the reach of sight. In the situation they were in, just the southern half of the horizon was illuminated by the rays of light reflected from the ice, to a considerable height. Ninety-seven ice hills were distinctly seen within the field, besides those on the outside; many of them very high and looking like a ridge of mountains, rising one above another, till they were lost in the clouds. The northern edge of this immense field was composed of loose or broken ice close packed together; so that it was not possible for any thing to enter it. This field was about a mile broad: within which was solid ice in a continued compact body. It was rather low and level except the hills, but seemed to increase in height towards the south; in which direction it extended beyond sight.

It being found impossible to proceed farther in that direction, the Captain came to a resolution to proceed to the north, and to spend the ensuing winter within the tropic, if he met with no employment before he came there, as he was now well satisfied no continent was to be found in this ocean, but what must lie south of the south, as to be totally inaccessible on account of ice; and that if one should be found in the South Atlantic Ocean, it would be necessary to have a whole summer before them to explore it. They then steered north, inclining to the east, and in the evening they were overtaken by a furious storm, attended with snow and sleet. It came so suddenly upon them, that before they could take in their sails, two of them were blown to pieces, and the others much damaged.

On the 25th Captain Cook was taken ill of the bilious cholic, which was so violent as to confine him

boards or planks, very early in the morning, over the snow-white brims of their approach, close to its edge, and the reach of the wind, just the sound of the waves, by the rays of the sun, to a considerable height. Not a few of them were within the reach of the clouds, rising one above another, as if they were clouds. The field was composed of ice, together; so that it was not possible to enter it. This was solid ice, and the surface was rather low and level, but the increase in height extended beyond the point, and proceeded farther in the distance. The resolution to proceed, during winter weather, was not to be employed before they were satisfied no contrary wind must lie in the way, possible on account of the wind in the South Sea, necessary to have a fair wind to blow it. They were not in the evening, and in the evening, attended upon them, and two of them were damaged. One of them was taken ill of the fever, and was to confine him-

ed; so that the management of the ship was left to Mr. Cooper, the first officer, who conducted her to his satisfaction. It was several days before the dangerous symptoms of his disorder were removed; during which time Mr. Patten, the surgeon, was to be not only a skilful physician, but an affectionate friend. When he began to recover, a favourite dog, belonging to Mr. Forster, fell a sacrifice to his tender mercies. They had no other fresh meat whatever on board; and the Captain could eat of this flesh, as well as broth made of it, when he could taste nothing else. As he received nourishment and strength from food which would have made most people in Europe sick; true it is, that necessity is governed by no law. At eight o'clock in the morning on the 11th of March, a sail was seen from the mast-head, bearing west, about five leagues distant. They now tacked, and endeavoured to get into what appeared to be a bay, on the west side of the point; but before this could be accomplished, night came upon them, and they stood on off, under the land, till the next morning. This was Easter Island, or Davis's Land. There a canoe, conducted by two men, came off. They brought with them a bunch of plantains, which were sent into the ship by a rope, and then they returned on shore. This gave the Captain a good opinion of the islanders, and inspired them with hopes of procuring some refreshments, of which they were in great want. They continued to range along the coast, till they opened the northern point of the isle. While the ship was plying in, a native came on board. The first thing he did was to measure the length of the ship, fathoming her from the taffrail to the stem; and as he counted the fathoms, they observed that he called the numbers by the same names that they do at Otaheite; nevertheless, his language was nearly unintelligible to all of them. The next morning the Captain went on shore, accompanied by some of the gentlemen, to see what the island was likely to afford. They landed at a sandy

beach, where some hundreds of the natives were assembled, and who were so impatient to see them, that many of them swam off to meet the boats. Not one of them had so much as a stick or weapon of any kind in his hand. After distributing a few trinkets among them, they made signs for something to eat; on which they brought down a few potatoes, plantains, and sugar-canes, and exchanged them for nails, looking-glasses, and pieces of cloth. They presently discovered that they were as expert thieves, and as tricking in the exchanges, as any people they had yet met with. It was with some difficulty they could keep their hands from their heads; but hardly possible to keep any thing out of their pockets, not even what themselves had sold; so they would watch every opportunity to snatch it from them, so that they sometimes bought the same thing two or three times over, and after all did not get it.

On the 16th of March they again stood out to sea, and having now a steady settled trade-wind, and pleasant weather, the forge was ordered to be set on shore to repair and make various necessary articles in the way. On the 6th of April they saw an isle, which, as it was a new discovery, they named *Hood's Island*, after the young gentleman who first saw it; the second was that of St. Pedro; the third, La Dominica; and the fourth, St. Christina. They ranged the S. E. coast of La Dominica, without seeing the least signs of anchorage. Some canoes put off from these places, and followed them down the coast.

At length, having come before the port they were in search of, they cast anchor. This was no sooner done, than about thirty or forty of the natives came in ten or twelve canoes; but it required some additional force to get them along-side. At last a hatchet and some spike-nails induced the people in one canoe to come under the quarter-gallery; after which all the others put along-side, and having exchanged some bread-fish and fish, for small nails, retired on shore.

On the 10th, early in the morning, some people from more distant parts came in canoes along-side, and

some pigs; so that they had now sufficient to give the crew a fresh meal. After dinner the Captain went ashore, and collected eighteen pigs. Next morning he went down to the same place where he had been the preceding evening; but, instead of getting pigs, as he expected, found the scene quite changed. The pigs, and other things, they were mad after but the evening before, they now despised. The reason was, several of the young gentlemen having landed the preceding day, had given away in exchange various articles which the people had not seen before, and which they valued more than nails, or more useful iron tools. Trade being thus stopped, the Captain prepared to leave this place, and go where their wants might be effectually relieved; for, after having been sixteen weeks at sea, and living all the time on salt provisions, they could not but want some refreshments; yet they had not one sick man on board, owing to the many antiscorbutic articles they had, and to the great attention of the surgeon. April the 11th, at three o'clock in the afternoon, they weighed. They had now but a light wind, and that very variable, with showers of rain.

With a fine easterly wind they steered till the 17th, when land was seen bearing W. half N. which, upon a nearer approach, they found to be a string of low islets, connected together by a reef of coral rocks. As they sailed along the coast, the natives appeared in several places, armed with long spears and clubs, and some were got together on one side of the creek. The Captain sent two boats, well armed, on shore, under the command of Lieutenant Cooper, with a view of having some intercourse with them. They saw them land without the least opposition. Some little time after, however, observing forty or fifty natives, all armed, coming towards the boats, they stood close in shore, in order to be ready to support their people in case of an attack. But nothing of this kind happened; and soon after the boats returned on board, when Mr. Cooper informed the Captain, that, on his landing, only a few

of the natives met him on the beach, but there were many in the skirts of the woods, with spears in their hands. The presents he made them were received with great coolness, which plainly shewed they were unwelcome visitors. They brought on-board five deer which seemed to be in plenty there. They saw no fruit, but cocoa-nuts, of which they got by exchange two dozen.

On the 18th, at day-break, they wore down to another isle, which they had in sight to the westward, which they reached by eight o'clock, and ranged to the S. E. side at one mile from shore. These must be the same islands to which Commodore Byron gave the name of George's Islands. They made the high land of Otaheite on the 21st of April, and at eight o'clock the next morning anchored in Matavai Bay. This was sooner known to the natives, than many of them paid them a visit, and expressed not a little joy at seeing them again.

On the 24th, Otoo, the king, and several other chiefs, with a train of attendants, paid them a visit and brought them, as presents, ten or a dozen large hogs, besides fruit. The Captain, knowing how much it was his interest to make this man his friend, met him at the tents, and conducted him and his friend on-board, where they staid dinner, after which they were dismissed with suitable presents, and highly pleased with the reception they had met with. On the morning of the 26th, the Captain went down to Opari accompanied by some of the officers and gentlemen, to pay Otoo a visit. As they drew near, they observed a number of large canoes in motion: but were surprised when they arrived, to see upwards of three hundred ranged in order, for some distance, along the shore, all completely equipped and manned, besides a vast number of armed men upon the shore. So unexpected an armament collected together in their neighbourhood in the space of one night, gave rise to various conjectures.

ch, but there were
with spears in the
them were received
shewed they were
on board five days
ere. They saw
got by exchange

wore down to an
to the westward
k, and ranged the
These must be
yron gave the name
the high land
at eight o'clock
Bay. This was
many of them per
little joy at seeing

and several others
paid them a visit
or a dozen large
knowing how much
his friend, met him
and his friend
er which they were
and highly pleased
n. On the morning
down to Oparree
and gentlemen,
r, they observed
ut were surprised
of three hundred
along the shore, and
besides a vast number
So unexpected a
ir neighbourhood
to various countries

They had not been long gone from Oparree, where
that time they missed Otoo, before the whole fleet
in motion, to the westward, whence it came.
When they got to Matavai, they were told that this
it was part of the armament intended to go against
Tahiti, whose chief had thrown off the yoke of Ota-
heite, and assumed an independency. On the morn-
ing of the 27th of April, the Captain received a pre-
sent from a chief named Towha, consisting of two
large hogs and some fruit, sent by two of his servants,
who had orders not to receive any thing in return; nor
could they, when offered them. Soon after, he went
down to Oparree in his boat, where having found both
the chief and the king, after a short stay, he brought
them both on board to dinner, together with Tareva-
a, the king's younger brother, and Tee. As soon as
they drew near the ship, the admiral, who had never
seen one before, began to express much surprise at so
new a sight. He was conducted all over the ship, every
part of which he viewed with great attention. On
this occasion, Otoo was the principal shew-man; for,
at this time, he was well acquainted with the differ-
ent parts of the ship. Soon after, the king and his at-
endants went away also. Captain Cook had been
ordered to assist them against Tiarabou, but to their soli-
citations he gave no encouragement.

On going on shore in the morning of the 7th, they
found Otoo at the tents, and took the opportunity to
give him leave to cut down some trees for fuel, which he
freely granted. The Captain told him he should cut
down no trees that bore any fruit. He was pleased
at this declaration, and told it aloud several times to
the people about them.

The following night all their friendly connections re-
ceived an interruption, through the negligence of one
of the sentinels on shore. He having either slept or
quitted his post, gave one of the natives an opportunity
to carry off his musket. The first news the Captain
heard of it was from Tee, whom Otoo had sent on board
for that purpose. They were not well enough ac-

quainted with their language to understand all Tee's story ; but they understood enough to know that something had happened which had alarmed the king. In order, therefore, to be fully informed, the Captain went on shore with Tee. As soon as they landed, he was informed of the whole by the serjeant who commanded the party. The natives were all alarmed, and the most of them fled. Tee and the Captain went to look for Otoo ; and as they advanced, he endeavoured to allay the fears of the people, but at the same time insisted on the musket being restored. After travelling some distance into the country, Tee stopped all at once, and advised the Captain to return, saying, that Otoo was gone to the mountains, and he would proceed, and tell him that he (the Captain) was still his friend. Tee also promised that he would use his endeavours to recover the musket.

On this the captain returned to the ship, and soon after he observed six large canoes coming round Point Venus. There being room for suspecting that some person belonging to these canoes had committed theft, he came to a resolution to intercept them ; and having put off in a boat for that purpose, gave orders for another to follow. One of the canoes, which was some distance ahead of the rest, came directly for the ship. He went along-side this, and was told that Otoo was then at the tents. Pleased with this news, he contradicted the orders he had given for intercepting the other canoes, thinking they might be coming on board also. But when he landed, he was told that Otoo had not been there, nor knew they any thing of him. Looking behind him, he saw all the canoes making off in the greatest haste ; even the one he had left along-side the ship had evaded going on board, and was making her escape. Vexed at being thus outwitted, he resolved to pursue them ; and as he passed the ship, gave orders to send another boat for the same purpose. Four out of six they took, and brought along-side ; but the first, which acted the finesse so well, got clear off,

understand all Tees, to know that some named the king. named, the Captain as they landed, a serjeant who came all alarmed, and the Captain went on board, he endeavoured at the same time. After travelling, he stopped all return, saying, that and he would (the Captain) was still he would use his

the ship, and some coming round Pa respecting that some had committed intercept them; and propose, gave order canoes, which came directly for him, was told that Otaheite this news, he came for intercepting the canoe coming on board, told that Otoo had nothing of him. The canoes making he had left alone board, and was made outwitted, he passed the ship, for the same purpose. The long-side; but they got clear off,

one of the canoes they had taken, was a chief, a son of Mr. Forster's, who had hitherto called him an Earee, and would have been much offended if one had called his title in question; also three women, his wife and daughter, and the mother of the Tootaha. These, together with the canoes, the Captain resolved to detain, and to send the chief to Otaheite; thinking he would have weight enough with him to obtain the return of the musket, as his own property was at stake. In the dusk of the evening it was brought in the tents, together with some other things they had taken, which they knew nothing of, by three men who had pursued the thief, and taken them from him. The Captain knew not if they took this trouble of their own accord, or by order of Otoo. He rewarded them, and made no farther enquiry about it. When the musket and other things were brought in, every one then pretended, or who came after, pretended to have some hand in the recovering them, and claimed a reward accordingly. But there was no one acted this farce so well as Otoo, a man of some note, and well known to the Captain when he was here in 1769. This man came, with all the savage fury imaginable in his countenance, and a large club in his hand, with which he beat about him, in order to shew how he alone had killed the thief; when, at the same time, they all knew he had not been out of his house the whole time.

As the most essential repairs of the ship were nearly finished, it was resolved to leave Otaheite in a few days; and the Captain accordingly ordered every thing to be got off from the shore, that the natives might see they were about to depart. On the 12th, Oberea, who had grown old and decrepid, paid them a visit, and brought a present of hogs and fruit. Soon after came Otoo, with a great retinue, and a large quantity of provisions. The Captain was pretty liberal in his returns, thinking it might be the last time he should see these good people, who had so liberally relieved their wants, and in the evening entertained them with fireworks.

In the afternoon, on the 15th of May, they anchored in O'Wharre Harbour, in the Island of Huaheine, when Oree, the chief, brought a hog, and other articles, to the Captain, who, in return, invited him and his friends to dinner. Early in the morning of the 23d they unmoored, and put to sea. Oree, the chief, was the last man who went out of the ship. At parting, the Captain told him they should see each other no more, at which he wept, and said, "Let your sons come, we will treat them well." Oree was a good man in the utmost sense of the word; but many of the people were far from being of that disposition, and seemed to take advantage of his old age. During their stay here, they got bread-fruit and cocoa-nuts in abundance, but not hogs enough; and yet it did not appear that they were scarce in the isle. It must, however, be allowed, that the number they took away when last here, must have thinned them greatly, and at the same time stocked the isle with our articles.

As soon as they were clear of the harbour, they made sail, and stood over for the south end of Ulietea, where they dropt anchor the next day. On the 25th, a party went on shore to pay the chief a visit, and make the customary present. At their first entering his house, they were met by four or five old women, weeping and lamenting, as it were, most bitterly, and at the same time cutting their heads with instruments made of shark's teeth, till the blood ran plentifully down their faces, and on their shoulders. What was still worse, they were obliged to submit to the embraces of these old hags, and by that means were all besmeared with blood. This ceremony being over, they went out, washed themselves, and immediately after appeared as cheerful as any of the company. The Captain made his presents, and after some little stay, returned on board.

The Captain having fixed on the 4th of June, his Majesty's birth-day, for sailing, Oreo, the chief, and his whole family, came on board, to take their last farewell, accompanied by Oo-oo-roa, the Earee de hi,

May, they anchored at the island of Huaheine, and other small islands, and returned, inviting the natives to return, and put to sea. The very hospitable manner in which he had ever been received by these people, had cleared them to him, and given them a just title to every thing in his power to grant. Oreo pressed him to return. When the Captain declined making any promises on that head, he asked the name of his Morai, (dying-place). As strange a question as this was, he hesitated not a moment to tell him Stepney; the parish which he lived when in London. He was requested to repeat it several times over till they could pronounce it. Then, Stepney Morai no Toote was echoed through a hundred mouths at once. What greater proof could they have of these people esteeming them as friends, in their wishing to remember them even beyond the grave? They had been repeatedly told that they should see them no more; they then wanted to know where they were to mingle with their parent dust. As they could not promise, or even suppose, that more English ships would be sent to those isles, their faithful companion, Oedidee, chose to remain in his native country. But he left the ship with a regret very demonstrative of the esteem he had for them. As Oedidee was going out of the ship, he asked the Captain to Tatou some Parou for him, in order to show the commanders of other ships which might stop there. He complied with his request, gave him a certificate of the time he had been with them, and recommended him to the notice of those who might touch at the island after them.

On the 16th, just after sun-rise, land was seen from the top-mast head. They immediately steered for it, and found it to be an island, composed of five or six woody islets, connected together by sand-banks and breakers, inclosing a lake, into which they could see no entrance. The Captain looked upon this as a new dis-

covery, and named it *Palmerston Island*, in honour of Lord Palmerston, one of the Lords of the Admiralty.

On the 20th they again saw land; and as they drew nearer, found it to be an island of considerable extent. Perceiving some people on the shore, and landing seeming to be easy, they hoisted out two boats, with which they put off, accompanied by some of the officers and gentlemen. Friendly signs were made to the natives, which were answered by menaces. All endeavours to bring them to a parley were to no purpose, for they advanced with the ferocity of wild boars, and threw their darts. Two or three muskets, discharged in the air, did not hinder one of them from advancing farther, and throwing another dart, which passed close over the captain's shoulder. His temerity would have cost him his life, had not the Captain's musket missed fire. The conduct and aspect of these islanders occasioned the Captain's naming it *Savages Island*. They seemed to be stout, well-made men, were naked, except round the waists; and some of them had their faces, breasts, and thighs, painted black.

On the 26th of June they arrived off the coast of Rotterdam. Before they had well got to an anchor, the natives came off from all parts in canoes, bringing with them yams and shaddocks, which they exchanged for small nails and old rags. Early in the morning of the 28th, Lieutenant Clerke, with the master and fourteen or fifteen men, went on shore in the launch for water. She was no sooner landed, than the natives gathered about her, behaving in so rude a manner, that the officers were in some doubt if they should land their casks; however, they ventured, and, with difficulty, got them filled, and into the boat again. While thus employed, Mr. Clerke's gun was snatched from him and carried off; as were also some of the cooper's tools, and other articles. All this was done, as it were, by stealth; for they laid hold of nothing by main force. The Captain landed just as the launch was ready to put off; and the natives, who were pretty numerous

beach, as soon as the saw him, fled; so that he expected something had happened. However, he waited on many to stay. Being informed of all the preceding circumstances, he quickly came to a resolution to oblige them to make restitution; and for this purpose, ordered all the marines to be armed, and on shore. He then sent all the boats off but one, in which he staid, having a good many of the natives about him, who behaved with their usual courtesy; he made them so sensible of his intention, that, before the marines came, Mr. Clerke's musket brought.

Captain Cook quitted Rotterdam, or Anamooka, immediately after this, and on the 30th they saw the point of Amattasfoa, but not clear enough to determine, with certainty, whether there was a volcano or no; but every thing they could see concurred to make them believe there was. As the Captain intended to get to the south, in order to explore the land which might lie there, they continued to ply between the Isles of Lepers and Aurora; and on the 19th of May, the last-mentioned isle bore south, distant twenty miles.

At day-break, on the 21st, they found themselves
 fore the channel that divides Whitsuntide Island from
 South Land, which is above two leagues over.
 Having sent two armed boats to sound, and look for
 anchorage, they soon followed. Next morning early,
 good many of the natives came round them, some in
 canoes, and others swimming. The Captain soon pre-
 sented on one to come on board; which he no sooner
 did, than he was followed by more than he desired;
 that not only the deck, but rigging, was presently
 covered with them. He took four into the cabin, and
 gave them various articles, which they shewed to those
 in the canoes, and seemed much pleased with their
 reception.

Unwilling to lose the benefit of the moon-light nights, which now happened, they weighed on the 24d, and proceeded out of the harbour. Soon after they got to

sea, they stood over for Ambrym. On the 24th, they reached an island near Apee, about four leagues in circuit; it is remarkable by having three high peaked hills upon it, by which it has obtained that name. They now steered to the east; and having weathered Three hills, stood for a groupe of small isles which lie off the S. E. point of Apee. These were called *Shepherd's Isles*, in honour of Dr. Shepherd, Plumian Professor of Astronomy at Cambridge.

Continuing their course to the south, they drew near the southern lands, which they found to consist of one large island, whose southern and western extremities extended beyond their sight, and three or four smaller ones, lying off its north side. The two northernmost are much the largest, have a good height, and lie in the direction of E. by S. and W. by N. from each other, distant two leagues. They named the one *Montagu*, and the other, *Hinchinbrook*; and the large island *Sandwich*, in honour of the Earl of Sandwich.

In the night of the 5th of August, they saw a volcano, which they observed to throw up vast quantities of fire and smoke, with a rumbling noise heard at a great distance. They now made sail for the island whence it appeared, and presently after discovered a small inlet, which had the appearance of being a good harbour. The wind left them as soon as they were within the entrance, and obliged them to drop an anchor in four fathoms water. After this the boats were sent to sound.

Towards the evening, the Captain landed at the head of the harbour, with a strong party of men, without any opposition being made by a great number of the natives, who were assembled in two parties, the one on the right, the other on the left, all armed. After distributing to the old people, (for they could distinguish no chief,) and some others, presents of cloth, medals, &c. he ordered two casks to be filled with water out of a pond, about twenty paces behind the landing-place, giving the natives to understand that this was one of the articles they wanted. Besides

On the 24th, the
four leagues in
the high peaked
that name. The
weathered Three
which lie off to
called *Shepherd*
Plumian Profes

h, they drew ne
und to consist
and western e
, and three or fo
The two northern
od height, and
by N. from each
ned the one *Mon*
; and the large
arl of Sandwich.
t, they saw a vol
up vast quantiti
noise heard at
ail for the island
after discovered
e of being a good
on as they were
em to drop an an
s the boats were

n landed at the
y of men, with
great number of
two parties, the
left, all armed
(for they could
ers, presents of
sks to be filled
ty paces behind
to understand
anted. Besides

water, they got from them a few cocoa-nuts, which seemed to be in plenty on the trees; but they could not be prevailed upon to part with any of their weapons. These they held in constant readiness, and in the proper attitudes of offence and defence, so that little was wanting to make them attack them. Their early re-embarking probably disconcerted their scheme, and after that they all retired.

While they were bringing the ship nearer the shore, to wood and water, they observed the natives assembling from all parts, and forming themselves into two parties, as they did the preceding evening, one on each side the landing-place, to the amount of some thousands, armed as before. A canoe, now and then, came off, bringing a few cocoa-nuts or plantains. The Captain made an old man, who seemed well disposed, understand, by signs, that they were to lay aside their weapons, and throwing those that were in the canoe overboard, made him a present of a large piece of cloth. There was no doubt that he understood him, and made his request known to his countrymen; for as soon as he landed, they observed him go first to the one party, and then to the other; nor was he ever after seen with any thing like a weapon in his hand. After this, three fellows came in a canoe under the stern, one of them brandishing a club, with which he struck the ship's side, and committed other acts of defiance; but at the last offered to exchange it for a string of beads, and some other trifles. These were sent down to him by a line; but the moment they were in his possession, he and his companions paddled off in all haste, without giving the club in return. This was what the Captain expected, and, indeed, what he was not sorry for, as he wanted an opportunity to shew the multitude on shore, the effect of their fire-arms, without materially hurting any of them. Having a fowling-piece loaded with small shot, he gave the fellow the contents; and when they were above musket shot off, he ordered some of the musketoons to be fired, which alarmed them much. This transaction, however, seemed to make little or

no impression on the people there : on the contrary, they began to halloo, and to make sport of it.

On the 9th, Mr. Forster learnt from the people the proper name of the island, which they call Tanna. They gave them to understand, in a manner which they thought admitted of no doubt, that they eat human flesh, and that circumcision was practised among them. They began the subject of eating human flesh of their own accord, by asking them if they did. One of the men employed in taking in ballast, scalded his fingers in removing a stone out of some water. This circumstance produced the discovery of several hot springs at the foot of the cliff, and rather below high water mark.

On the 17th, the Captain went on shore, to pay a visit to an old chief, who was said to be king of the island. His name was Geogy, and they gave him the title of Areeke. He was very old, but had a merry, open countenance. He wore round his waist, a broad red and white chequered belt ; but this was hardly a mark of distinction. The next day, the Captain went again ashore, and found in the crowd old Geogy, and a son of his, who soon made him understand, that they wanted to dine with him ; and accordingly he brought them, and two more, on board. When he got them on board, he went with them all over the ship, which they viewed with uncommon surprise and attention. They happened to have for their entertainment, a kind of a pie, or pudding, made of plantains, and some sort of greens which they had got from one of the natives. On this, and on yams, they made a hearty dinner. In the afternoon, having made each of them a present of a hatchet, a spike-nail, and some medals, they were conducted on shore.

On the 20th of August, as soon as the boats were hoisted in, they made sail, and stretched to the eastward. Nothing material occurred till September 4th, when looking S. E. the coast seemed to terminate in a high promontory, which the Captain named *Cape Colnet*, after one of his midshipmen, who first discovered

on the contrary,
t of it.

n the people the
ney call Tanna.
manner which
at they eat hu-
practised among
g human flesh
they did. One
last, scalded his
e water. This
of several hot
ther below high

shore, to pay a
be king of the
y gave him the
it had a merry,
waist, a broad
is was hardly a
e Captain went
ld Geogy, and
stand, that they
gly he brought
ne got them on
hip, which they
ention. They
t, a kind of a
d some sort of
he natives. On
inner. In the
a present of a
they were con-

he boats were
ed to the east-
eptember 4th,
terminate in a
ed Cape Col-
rst discovered

CAPTAIN COOK.

123

this land. Some gaps, or openings, were seen on the 5th to lie all along the coast, whither they plyed up. After running two leagues down the outside of the reef (for such it proved) they came before an opening that had the appearance of a good channel. They wanted to get on shore, to have an opportunity to observe an eclipse of the sun, which was soon to happen. With this view they hoisted out two armed boats, and sent them to sound the channel; ten or twelve large sailing canoes being then near them. They had observed them coming off from the shore all the morning, from different parts. The boats having made a signal for a channel, they stood in. They had hardly got to an anchor, before they were surrounded by a great number of the natives, in sixteen or eighteen canoes, the most of whom were without any sort of weapons. At first they were shy of coming near the ship; but in a short time they prevailed on the people in one canoe to come close enough to receive some presents. These they lowered down to them by a rope, to which, in return, they tied two fish, that stunk intolerably. These mutual exchanges bringing on a kind of confidence, two ventured on board the ship; and presently after, she was filled with them, and they had the company of several at dinner in the cabin.

After dinner, the Captain went on shore with two armed boats, having with them one of the natives who had attached himself to him. They landed on a sandy beach before a vast number of people, who had got together with no other intent than to see them; for many of them had not a stick in their hands; consequently they were received with great courtesy, and with the surprise natural for people to express, at seeing men and things so new to them as they must be. The Captain made presents to all those his new friends pointed out, who were either old men, or such as seemed to be of some note; but he took not the least notice of a few women who stood behind the crowd, keeping back the Captain's hand when he was going to give them some beads and medals. Here they found

a chief, whose name was Teabooma ; and they had not been on shore above ten minutes, before he called for silence. Being instantly obeyed by every individual present, he made a short speech ; and soon after another chief having called for silence, made a speech also. It was pleasing to see with what attention they were heard. Their speeches were composed of short sentences ; to each of which two or three old men answered, by nodding their heads, and giving a kind of grunt, significant of approbation. It was impossible for them to know the purport of these speeches ; but they had reason to think they were favourable to them, on whose account they doubtless were made.

The next morning they were visited by some hundreds of the natives ; so that before ten o'clock, their decks, and all other parts of the ship, were quite full. The Captain's friend, who was of the number, brought him a few roots ; but all the others came empty in respect to eatables. Some few had with them their arms, such as clubs and darts, which they exchanged for nails, pieces of cloth, &c. On the following day, Mr. Wales, accompanied by Lieutenant Clark, went to make preparations for observing the eclipse of the sun, which was to happen in the afternoon.

Every thing being in readiness to put to sea, at sunrise, on the 13th of September, they weighed, and stood out for sea. Nothing remarkable occurred till the 28th in the evening, when two low islots were seen bearing W. by S. and as they were connected by breakers, which seemed to join those on their starboard, it became necessary to haul off, in order to get clear of them. Soon after more breakers appeared, extending from the low isles to a great distance. They spent the night in making short boards, under the terrible apprehension, every moment, of falling on some of the many dangers which surrounded them. Day-light shewed that their fears were not ill-founded, and that they had been in the most imminent danger, having had breakers continually under their lee, and at a very little distance from them. They owed their safety to

d they had not
re he called for
ery individual
soon after an-
made a speech
attention they
posed of short
e old men an-
iving a kind of
s impossible for
ches; but they
e to them, on

by some hun-
o'clock, their
ere quite full
umber, brought
ame empty in
ith them their
ney exchanged
following day,
t Clark, went
eclipse of the
on.

o sea, at sun-
weighed, and
e occurred till
lots were seen
connected by
their starboard,
to get clear of
ed, extending
They spent the
terrible appre-
some of the
y-light shewed
and that they
er, having had
nd at a very
their safety to

the interposition of Providence, a good look out, and
the very brisk manner in which the ship was managed.

They were now almost tired of a coast which they
could no longer explore, but at the risk of losing the
ship, and ruining the whole voyage. The ship was at
this time conducted by an officer placed at the mast-
head: soon after, with great difficulty, they arrived
within a mile of land, and were obliged to anchor in
thirty-nine fathoms water; they then hoisted out a
boat, in which the Captain went on shore, accompanied
by the botanists. Here they found several tall trees,
which had been observed before at a considerable dis-
tance: they appeared to be a kind of spruce pine, very
proper for spars, of which they were in want; after
making this discovery, they hastened on board, in order
to have more time after dinner, when they landed
again with two boats, to cut down such trees as were
wanting. Having got ten or twelve small spars to
make studding-sail booms, boats' masts, &c. and
night approaching, they returned with them on board.

The purpose for which they anchored under this isle
being answered, it was necessary to consider what was
next to be done. They had, from the top-mast head,
taken a view of the sea around, and observed the
whole, to the west, to be strewed with small islots,
sand-banks, and breakers, to the utmost extent of their
horizon. This induced the Captain to try to get with-
out the shoals.

Next morning, at day-break, the 30th of Septem-
ber, they got under sail, and met with no occurrences
worthy of remark for some days. In the evening of
the 8th of October, Mr. Cooper having struck a por-
poise with a harpoon, it was necessary to bring to, and
have two boats out, before they could kill it, and get
it on board. It was six feet long; a female of that
kind, which naturalists call dolphins of the ancients,
and which differs from the other kind of porpoise in the
head and jaw, having them long and pointed. This
had eighty-eight teeth in each jaw. The haslet, and
lean flesh, were to them a feast. It was eaten roasted,

broiled, and fried, first soaking it in warm water. Indeed, little art was wanting to make any thing fresh palatable to those who had been living so long on salt meat.

On the 10th, at day-break, they discovered land, bearing S W. which, on nearer approach, they found to be an island of good height, and five leagues in circuit. It was named *Norfolk Isle*, in honour of the noble family of Howard. After dinner, a party embarked in two boats, and landed, without any difficulty, behind some large rocks, which lined part of the coast. They found it uninhabited, and were undoubtedly the first that ever set foot on it. They observed many trees and plants common at New Zealand; and, in particular, the flax plant, which is rather more luxuriant here than in any part of that country: but the chief produce is a sort of spruce pine, which grows in abundance, and to a large size, many of the trees being a thick, breast high, as two men could fathom, and exceedingly straight and tall. It resembles the Quebec pine. For about two hundred yards from the shore, the ground is covered so thick with shrubs and plants, as hardly to be penetrated farther inland. The woods were perfectly clear, and free from underwood, and the soil seemed rich and deep.

After leaving *Norfolk Isle*, they steered for New Zealand, intending to touch at Queen Charlotte's Sound, to refresh the crew, and put the ship in a condition to encounter the southern latitudes. On the 17th at day-break, they saw Mount Egmont, which was covered with everlasting snow. Their distance from the shore was about eight leagues. On the 18th, they anchored before Ship Cove; and in the afternoon, the Captain went into the cove, with the seine, to try to catch some fish. The first thing he did after landing, was to look for the bottle he left when last here, in which was the memorandum. It was taken away, but by whom it did not appear. Two hauls with the seine producing only four small fish, they in some mea-

were made up for this deficiency, by shooting several birds.

Being little wind next morning, they weighed, and warped the ship into the cove, and there moored. Here the forge was erected, and the ship and rigging repaired. The Captain gave orders that vegetables should be boiled every morning, with oat-meal and porridge, for breakfast, and with peas and broth every day for dinner, for the whole crew, over and above their usual allowance of salt meat. In the afternoon, as Mr. Wales was setting up his observatory, he discovered that several trees, which were standing when they last sailed from this place, had been cut down with saws and axes. It was therefore now no longer to be doubted that the Adventure had been in this cove after they had left it.

On the 6th of November, their old friends having taken up their abode near them, one, whose name was Pedro, (a man of some note,) made the Captain a present of a staff of honour, such as the chiefs generally carry. In return, he dressed him in a suit of old clothes, of which he was not a little proud. Having got this person, and another, into a communicative mood, he began to enquire of them if the Adventure had been there during his absence; and they gave them to understand in a manner which admitted of no doubt, that, soon after they were gone, she arrived; that she staid between ten and twenty days, and had been gone ten months.

On the 10th of November, they took their farewell of New Zealand, and steered for Cape Campbell. The Captain's intention now was to cross this vast ocean, so as to pass over those parts which were left unexplored the preceding summer. On Saturday, the 17th of December, they made land, about six leagues distant. On this discovery, they wore, and brought to, with the ship's head to the south; and having sounded, found seventy-five fathoms water, the bottom stone and shells. The land now before them could be no other

than the west coast of Terra del Fuego, and near the west entrance of the Straits of Magalhaens.

On the 18th of December, as they continued to range the coast, about two leagues distant, they passed a projecting point, which was called *Cape Gloucester*. It shews a round surface of considerable height, and has much the appearance of being an island, distant seventeen leagues from the Isle of Landfall. On the 20th, at noon, they observed York Minster, then distant five leagues. At ten o'clock, a breeze springing up at E. by S. they took this opportunity to stand in for the land, to recruit their stock of wood and water, and take a view of the country. Here was found plenty, and they set about doing what was necessary to the ship, the outside of which was become very foul. The Captain was now told of a melancholy accident which had befallen one of the marines. He had not been seen since eleven or twelve o'clock the preceding night. It was supposed that he had fallen overboard, out of the head, where he had been last seen, and was drowned.

On the 23d, Mr. Pickersgill was sent in the cutter to explore the east side of the sound, with an intent to survey the island under which they were at anchor, and which the Captain called *Shag Island*. About seven in the evening he returned, and reported, that the land opposite to their station was an island which had been round; that between it and the east head lay a cove, in which were many geese. This information induced them to make up two shooting parties next day; Mr. Pickersgill and his associates going in the cutter, and the Captain and the botanists in the pinnace. Mr. Pickersgill went in one direction, and the Captain in another, and they had sport enough among the geese, whence this was denominated *Goose Island*. There being a high surf, they found great difficulty in landing, and very bad climbing over the rocks when they were landed; so that hundreds of the geese escaped, some into the sea, and others up into the land. They, however, by one means or other, got sixty-two, with

o, and near the
aens.

ey continued to
ant, they passed
ape Gloucester.
able height, and
a island, distant
ndfall. On the
nster, then dis-
reeze springing
y to stand in for
and water, and
found plenty.
necessary to the
ery foul. The
accident which
had not been
receding night.
erboard, out of
een, and was

t in the cutter
th an intent to
at anchor, and

About seven
ted, that the
nd which had
ast head lay a
s information
ies next day;

in the cutter;

innace. Mr.

he Captain in

g the geese,

and. There

y in landing,

n they were

aped, some

They, how-

-two, with

ch they returned on board all heartily tired; but
acquisition they had made overbalanced every other
sideration, and they sat down with a good appetite
upper, on part of what the preceding day had pro-
ced. Mr. Pickersgill and his associates had got on
ard some time before with fourteen geese, so that
y were able to make a distribution to the whole crew,
uch was the more acceptable on account of the ap-
aching festival; for had not Providence thus singu-
ly provided for them, their Christmas cheer must
ve been salt beef and pork.

The next morning, the 25th, some of the natives
d them a visit. They were a little ugly, half-starved,
ardless race; not a tall person appeared amongst
em. They were almost naked; their only clothing
as a seal-skin. The women cover their middle with
e flap of a seal-skin, but in other respects are clothed
ke the men. Two young children were seen at the
east entirely naked; thus they are inured from their
fancy to cold and hardships. They had with them
ows and arrows; and darts, or rather harpoons, made
of bone, and fitted to a staff. They, and every thing
they had, smelt most intolerably of train oil.

Roast and boiled geese and goose-pye, was a treat
little known to the seamen; and they had yet some
Madeira wine left, which was the only article of pro-
vision that was intended by keeping; so that their
friends in England did not, perhaps, celebrate Christ-
mas, more cheerfully than they did. This was named
Christmas Sound.

On the 28th they weighed, and stood out to sea, re-
suming their course to the east; and the next day they
passed Cape Horn, and entered the Southern Atlantic
Ocean. It is the most southern extremity on a groupe
of islands of unequal extent, lying before Nassau Bay,
known by the name of Hermit Islands. From Cape
Horn, they stood over for Success Bay, assisted by the
currents, which set to the north. Before this, they
had hoisted their colours, and fired two guns; and soon
after, they saw a smoke rise out of the woods, above

the south point of the bay, which was supposed to be made by the natives. As soon as they got off the bay, Lieutenant Pickersgill went to see if any traces remained of the Adventure; but he saw not the least signs of any ship having been there lately. The Captain had inscribed his ship's name on a card, which he nailed to a tree, at the place where the Endeavour watered. In the morning, at three o'clock, they bore up for the east end of Staten Land, where they arrived next day in the afternoon. After dinner they hoisted out three boats, and landed with a large party of men; some to kill seals; others to catch or kill birds, fish, or what came in their way. To find the former, it mattered not where they landed, for the whole shore was covered with them; and by the noise they made, one would have thought the island was stocked with cows and calves. On landing, they found they were a different animal from seals, but in appearance and motion exactly resembling them. The sailors called them lions, on account of the great resemblance the male has to that beast. Here were also the same kind of seals which they found in New Zealand, generally known by the name of sea-bears; at least they gave them that name. They were in general so tame, or rather stupid, as to suffer them to come near enough to knock them down with sticks; but the large ones were shot, not thinking it safe to approach them. They also found on the island, abundance of penguins and shags. Here were geese and ducks, but not many; birds of prey, and a few small birds. In the evening they returned on board with plenty of spoil.

Next day, being January the 1st, 1775, finding that nothing was wanting but a good harbour to make this a tolerable place for ships to refresh at, which chance or design might bring hither, Mr. Gilbert went over to State Land in the cutter, to look for one. The Captain also sent two other boats, which returned laden with sea-lions, sea-bears, &c. The old lions and bears were killed chiefly for the sake of their blubber, or fat, to make oil of; for, except their haslets, which were

terable, the flesh was too rank to be eaten with any degree of relish. But the young cubs were very palatable; and even the flesh of some of the old lionesses was not much amiss. About ten o'clock, Mr. Gilbert returned from Staten Land, where he had found a good port, situated three leagues to the westward of Cape St. John. It is almost two miles in length; in some places near a mile broad. On the island were lions and seals, and such an innumerable quantity of molls, as to darken the air when disturbed, and almost to suffocate the people with their dung. This they seemed to void in a way of defence, and it stunk worse than assafœtida. The day on which this port was discovered, occasioned the Captain's calling it *New-year's Harbour*.

Having left the land in the evening of the 3d, they saw it again next morning, bearing west. On the 4th, at nine o'clock in the morning, they descried an island of ice, as they then thought; but at noon were doubtful whether it was ice or land; it turned out to be the latter, and was in a manner wholly covered with snow. On the 16th they began to explore the northern coast, and next morning they made sail in for the land. As soon as they drew near the shore, having hoisted out a boat, the Captain embarked in it, accompanied by Mr. Forster and his party, with a view of reconnoitring before they ventured in with the ship, which they afterwards declined, as the inner parts of the country were savage and horrible. The wild rocks reached their lofty summits, till they were lost in the clouds, and the valleys lay covered with everlasting snow. Not a tree was to be seen, or a shrub even big enough to make a tooth-pick. They found here nearly the same animals as in the *New-year's Harbour*.

Since their arrival on this coast, the Captain ordered, in addition to the common allowance, wheat to be boiled every morning for breakfast; but any kind of fresh meat was preferred by most on board to salt: for his part, he says, he was heartily tired of salt meat of every kind; and though the flesh of the penguins could scarcely vie with bullock's liver, its being fresh,

was sufficient to make it go down. They called the bay they had been in *Possession Bay*. As soon as the boat was hoisted in, they made sail along the coast to the east, for the space of eleven or twelve leagues, to a projecting point, which obtained the name of *Cape Saunders*. Beyond this cape is a pretty large bay, which was named *Cumberland Bay*.

On the 20th they fell in with an island, which they named the *Isle of Georgia*, in honour of his Majesty. It extends thirty-one leagues in length; and its greatest breadth is about ten leagues. It seems to abound with bays and harbours, the N. E. coast especially; but the vast quantity of ice coast renders them inaccessible the greatest part of the year.

From the 20th to the 27th they had a continuation of foggy weather. They now growing almost tired of high northern latitudes, where nothing was to be found but ice and thick fogs, stood to the east, when they soon fell in, all at once, with a vast number of large ice-lands, and a sea strewed with loose ice. For this reason they tacked, and stood to the west, with the wind at north. The ice-lands, which at this time surrounded them, were nearly all of equal height, and shewed a flat even surface.

On the 1st of February, they got sight of a new coast. It proved a high promontory, which was named *Cape Montagu*; but prudence would not permit them to venture near shore, where there was no anchorage, and where every port was blocked or filled up with ice; and the whole country, from the summits of the mountains down to the very brink of the cliffs, which terminate the coast, covered, many fathoms thick, with everlasting snow.

It was now necessary to take a view of the land to the north, before they proceeded any farther to the east. On the 3d they saw two isles. The day on which they were discovered, was the occasion of calling them *Candlemas Isles*. They were of no great extent, but of considerable height, and were covered with snow. On the 4th they resumed their course to

They called the
As soon as the
long the coast to
elve leagues, to
e name of Cape
retty large bay,

nd, which they
of his Majesty.
and its greatest
to abound with
pecially; but the
inaccessible the

d a continuation
almost tired of
was to be found
east, when they
umber of large
e ice. For this
west, with the
t this time sur-
al height, and

ight of a new
ch was named
t permit them
no anchorage,
filled up with
ammit of the
e cliffs, which
s thick, with

f the land to
urther to the
The day on
asion of call-
of no great
ere covered
ir course to

the east. About noon they met with several ice-islands, and some loose ice, the weather continuing hazy, with snow and rain.

On the 22d of February, as they were within two degrees of longitude from their route to the south, when they left the Cape of Good Hope, it was to no purpose to proceed any farther to the east under this parallel, knowing that no land could be there. They had now made the circuit of the Southern Ocean in a high latitude, and traversed it in such a manner as to leave not the least room for the possibility of there being a continent, unless near the pole, and out of the reach of navigation. By twice visiting the tropical sea, they had not only settled the situation of some old discoveries, but made there many new ones, and left very little more to be done in that part. Thus the intention of the voyage had, in every respect, been fully answered; the southern hemisphere sufficiently explored; and a final end put to the searching after a southern continent.

Their sails and rigging were so much worn, that something was giving way every hour; and they had nothing left either to repair or replace them. Their provisions were in a state of decay, and yielded little nourishment, and they had been a long time without refreshments. The sailors, indeed, were yet healthy, and would have cheerfully gone wherever they were led; but they dreaded the scurvy laying hold of them, at a time when they had nothing left to remove it. It would, however, have been cruel to have continued the fatigues and hardships they were continually exposed to, longer than was absolutely necessary. Their behaviour, throughout the whole voyage, merited every indulgence which it was possible to give them. Animated by the conduct of the officers, they shewed themselves capable of surmounting every difficulty and danger which came in their way, and never once looked either upon one or the other, as being at all frightened, by their separation from their consort, the Adventure.

On the 12th they put a boat into the water, and shot some albatrosses and peterels, which, at this time, were highly acceptable. Every one was now become impatient to get into port; this induced the Captain to yield to the general wish, and to steer for the Cape of Good Hope. The Captain now demanded of the officers and petty officers, the log-books and journals they had kept; which were delivered accordingly, and sealed up for the inspection of the admiralty. He also enjoined them, and the whole crew, not to divulge where they had been till they had their lordships' permission so to do.

In the evening of the 17th they saw land about six leagues distant. Next day, having little or no wind, they hoisted out a boat, and sent on board a ship which was about two leagues from them; but they were too impatient after news to regard the distance. Soon after three sail more appeared in sight to windward, one of which shewed English colours.

The boat returning, reported that they had visited a Dutch East Indiaman, whose captain very obligingly offered them sugar, arrack, and whatever he had to spare. They were told by some English seamen on board this ship, that the Adventure had arrived at the Cape of Good Hope twelve months ago, and that the crew of one of her boats had been murdered and eaten by the people of New Zealand.

On the 19th the True Briton, Captain Broadly, from China, bore down to them. As this ship did not intend to touch at the Cape, the Captain put a letter on board for the secretary of the admiralty. The melancholy account which they had heard of the Adventure was now confirmed. From this ship they procured a parcel of old news-papers, which were new to them, and gave them some amusement; but these were the least favours they received from Captain Broadly. With a generosity peculiar to the commanders of the India Company's ships, he sent them fresh provisions, tea, and other articles, which were very acceptable. In the afternoon they parted com-

any. The True Briton stood out to sea, and they in for the land.

The next morning, being with them, Wednesday, the 22d, but with the people here, Tuesday, the 21st, they anchored in Table Bay, where they found several Dutch ships; some French; and the Ceres, Captain Newte, an English East India Company's ship, from China, bound directly to England, by whom they sent a copy of the preceding part of this journal, some charts, and other drawings, to the admiralty. Before they had well got to an anchor; the Captain dispatched an officer to acquaint the Governor with their arrival, and to request the necessary stores and refreshments, which were readily granted.

The Captain now learned that the Adventure had called here on her return; and he found a letter from Captain Furneaux, acquainting him with the loss of his boat, and of ten of his best men, in Queen Charlotte's Sound. The following particulars Captain Cook learnt after his arrival in England, concerning the progress of the Adventure after their separation.

In October, 1773, they were blown off the coast of New Zealand; when they parted company with the Resolution, and never saw her afterwards. They combated violent storms till the 6th of November; when, being to the north of Cape Palliser, they bore away for some bay to complete their water and wood, being in great want of both; having been at the allowance of one quart of water for some days past; and even that pittance could not be come at above six or seven days longer. They anchored at Tolaga Bay. Wood and water are easily to be had. Having got about ten tons, and some wood, they sailed for Charlotte Sound on the 12th; but violent weather prevented them from reaching it till the 30th. They saw nothing of the Resolution, and began to doubt her safety; but, on going on shore, they discerned the place where she had erected her tents; and, on an old stump of a tree in the garden, observed these words cut out, "Look underneath." There they dug, and soon found a bottle,

corked and waxed down, with a letter in it from Captain Cook, signifying their arrival on the 3d instant, and departure on the 24th, and that they intended spending a few days in the entrance of the straits to look for them.

They immediately set about the necessary repairs of the ship, which employed them till the 16th of December. Next day, they sent their large cutter, with Mr. Rowe, a midshipman, and the boat's crew, to gather wild greens for the ship's company; with orders to return that evening, as they intended to sail the next morning. But, on the boat's not returning the same evening, nor the next morning, the second lieutenant, Mr. Burney, in the launch, manned with the boat's crew, and ten marines, went in search of her. Mr. Burney returned about eleven o'clock the same night, and informed them of a horrible scene indeed, which cannot be better described than in his own words.

" On the 18th, we left the ship; and having a light breeze in our favour, we soon got round Long-Island. I examined every cove, on the larboard hand, as we went along, looking well all around with a telescope. At half past one, we stopped at a beach on the left-hand side going up East Bay, to boil some victuals. Whilst we were cooking, I saw an Indian on the opposite shore, running along a beach to the head of the bay. Our meat being drest, we got into the boat, and put off; and, in a short time, arrived at the head of this reach, where we saw an Indian settlement.

" As we drew near, some of the Indians came down to the rocks, and waved for us to be gone; but seeing we disregarded them, they altered their notes. Here we found six large canoes hauled up on the beach, most of them double ones, and a great many people. Leaving the boat's crew to guard the boat, I stepped on shore with the marines, (the corporal and five men,) and searched a good many of their houses; but found nothing to give me any suspicion. Coming down to the beach, one of the Indians had brought a bundle of

hepatos, (long spears,) but seeing I looked very earnestly at him, he put them on the ground, and walked about with seeming unconcern. Some of the people appearing to be frightened, I gave a looking-glass to one, and a large nail to another. From this place the bay ran, as nearly as I could guess, a good mile. I looked all round with the glass, but saw no boat, canoe, or any sign of inhabitant. I therefore contented myself with firing some guns, which I had done in every cove as I went along.

"I now kept close to the east shore, and came to another settlement, where the Indians invited us on shore. I enquired of them about the boat, but they pretended ignorance. They appeared very friendly here, and sold us some fish. Within an hour after we left this place, in a small beach adjoining to Grass Cove, we saw a very large double canoe just hauled up, with two men and a dog. The men, on seeing us, left their canoe, and ran up into the woods. This gave me reason to suspect I should here get tidings of the cutter. We went on shore, and searched the canoe, where we found one of the rullock-ports of the cutter, and some shoes, one of which was known to belong to Mr. Woodhouse, one of our midshipmen. One of the people, at the same time, brought me a piece of meat, which he took to be some of the salt meat belonging to the cutter's crew. On examining this, and smelling to it, I found it was fresh. Mr. Fannin (the master) who was with me, supposed it was dog's flesh, and I was of the same opinion; for I still doubted their being cannibals. But we were soon convinced by the most horrid and undeniable proof.

"A great many baskets (about twenty) lying on the beach, tied up, we cut them open. Some were full of roasted flesh, and some of fern-root, which serves them for bread. On farther search, we found more shoes, and a hand, which we immediately knew to have belonged to Thomas Hill, one of our forecaskmen, it being marked T. H. with an Otaheite tattoo-instrument. I went with some of the people a little

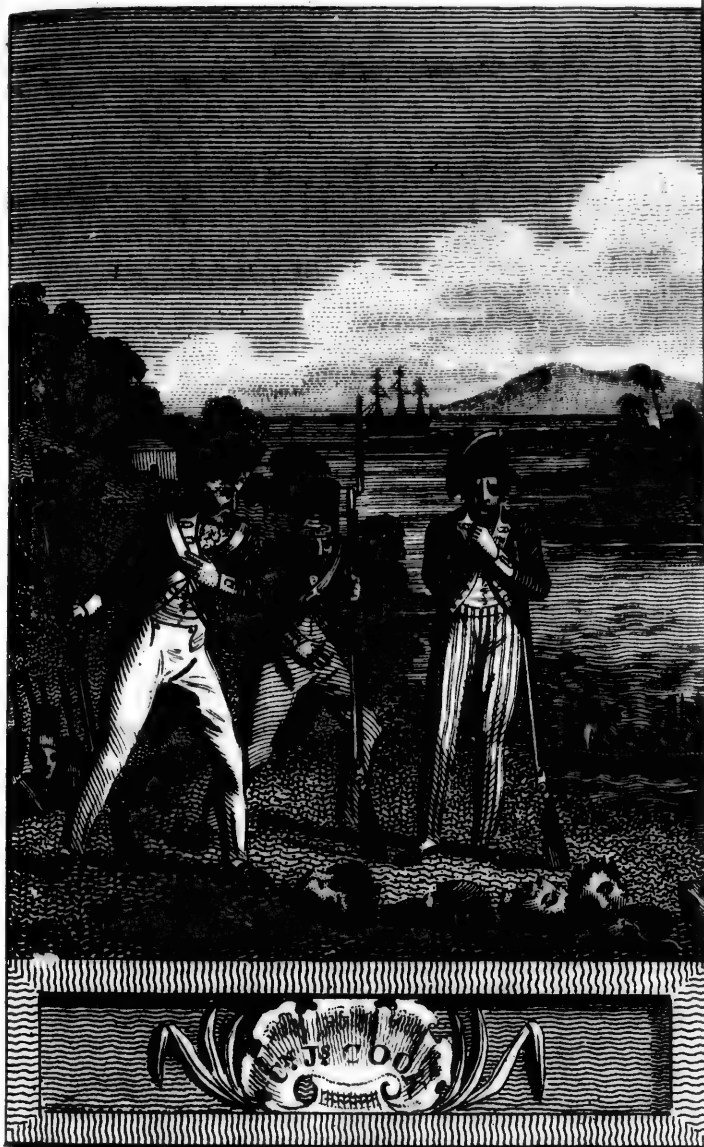
way up the woods, but saw nothing else. Coming down again, there was a round spot, covered with fresh earth, about four feet diameter, where something had been buried. Having no spade, we began to dig with a cutlass; and in the mean time I launched the canoe with intent to destroy her; but seeing a great smoke ascending over the nearest hill, I got all the people into the boat, and made what haste I could to be with them before sun-set.

“ On opening the next bay, which was Grass Cove, we saw four canoes, and a great many people on the beach, who, on our approach, retreated to a small hill, within a ship's length of the water side, where they stood talking to us. A large fire was on the top of the high land, beyond the woods, whence, all the way down the hill, the place was thronged like a fair. The savages on the little hill still kept hallooing, and making signs for us to land; however, as soon as we got close in, we all fired. The first volley did not seem to affect them much; but on the second, they began to scramble away as fast as they could, some of them howling. We continued firing as long as we could see the glimpse of any of them through the bushes. Among the Indians were two very stout men, who never offered to move till they found themselves forsaken by their companions: and then they marched away with great composure and deliberation, their pride not suffering them to run. One of them, however, got a fall, and either lay there, or crawled off on all fours. The other got clear, without any apparent hurt. I then landed with the marines, and Mr. Fannin staid to guard the boat.

“ On the beach were two bundles of celery, which had been gathered for loading the cutter. A broken oar was stuck upright in the ground, to which the natives had tied their canoes; a proof that the attack had been made here. I then searched all along at the back of the beach, to see if the cutter was there. We found no boat, but instead of her, such a shocking scene of carnage and barbarity, as can never be mentioned or thought of but with horror; for the heads,

Coming
red with
something
n to dig
ched the
g a great
t all the
could to

ss Core,
e on the
mall hill,
re they
o of the
he way
r. The
making
ot close
to affect
cramble
owling.
glimpse
the In-
ered to
ir com-
at com-
g them
either
er got
d with
boat.
which
broken
ch the
attack
at the
We
ocking
men-
heads,

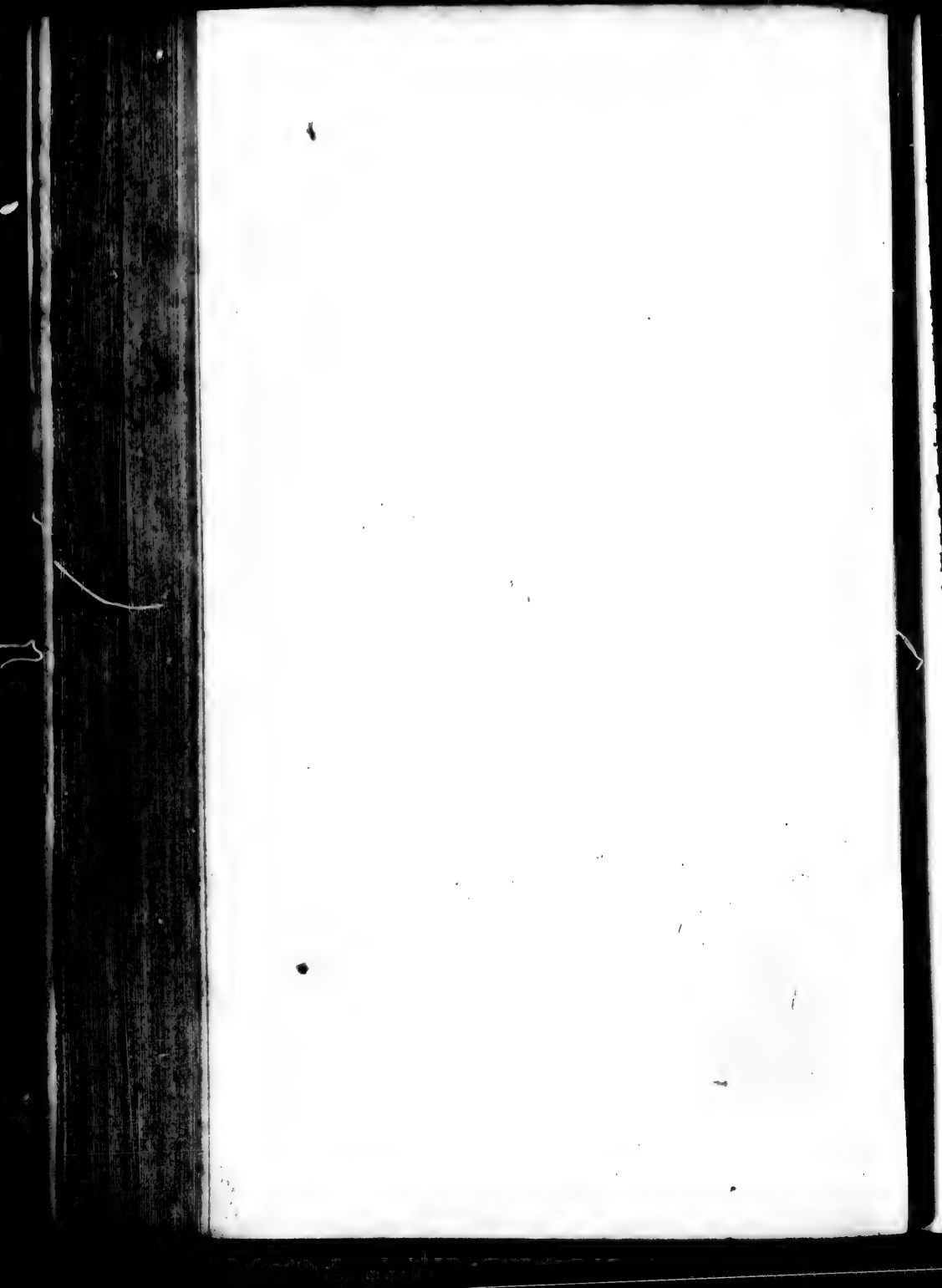


WG del.

Page 138

S. Sharpe & Co.

Published by & for I. Roe 1807.



hearts and lungs of several of our people were seen lying on the beach; and at a little distance the dogs gnawing their entrails.

"Whilst we remained almost stupified on the spot, Mr. Fannin called to us that he heard the savages gathering together in the woods; on which I returned to the boat, and hauling along-side the canoes, we demolished three of them. Whilst this was transacting, the fire on the top of the hill disappeared, and we could hear the Indians in the wood at high words; I suppose quarrelling whether they should attack us, and try to save their canoes. It now grew dark; I, therefore, just stepped out, and looked once more behind the beach, to see if the cutter had been hauled up in the bushes, but seeing nothing of her, returned, and put off. Our whole force would have been barely sufficient to have gone up the hill; and to have ventured with half (for half must have been left to guard the boat) would have been fool-hardiness.

"As we opened the upper part of the sound, we saw a very large fire about three or four miles higher up, which formed a complete oval, reaching from the top of a hill down almost to the water side, the middle space being inclosed all round by the fire, like a hedge. I consulted with Mr. Fannin, and we were both of opinion, that we could expect to reap no other advantage than the poor satisfaction of killing some more of the savages.

"Coming between two round islands, situated to the southward of East Bay, we imagined we heard somebody calling; we lay on our oars, and listened, but heard no more of it; we hallooed several times, but to little purpose; the poor souls were far enough out of hearing: and, indeed, I think it some comfort to reflect, that, in all probability, every man of them must have been killed on the spot."

In all probability this unhappy business originated in some quarrel, which was decided on the spot; or incautiousness might tempt the natives to seize the opportunity of satisfying their inhuman appetites. They

were detained in the Sound, by contrary winds, four days after this melancholy affair happened, during which time they saw none of the inhabitants. On the 23d they weighed, and made sail out of the Sound, and stood to the eastward, but were baffled for two or three days with light winds, before they could clear the coast. January the 10th, 1774, they arrived abreast of Cape Horn. They were very little more than a month sailing from Cape Palliser, in New Zealand, to Cape Horn, which is 121 deg. of longitude.

On opening some casks of peas and flour that had been stowed on the coals, they found them very much damaged, and not eatable; so thought it most prudent to make for the Cape of Good Hope. On the 17th of February, they made the land of the Cape of Good Hope, and on the 19th anchored in Table Bay, where they found Commodore Sir Edward Hughes, with his Majesty's ships Salisbury and Seahorse. On the 16th of April, Captain Furneaux sailed for England, and on the 14th of July anchored at Spithead.

We now return to Captain Cook. The day after his arrival at the Cape of Good Hope, he waited on the Governor, Baron Plettenberg, and other principal officers, who received and treated him with the greatest politeness.

They had only three men on board, whom it was thought necessary to send on shore for the recovery of their health; and for these the Captain procured quarters, at the rate of thirty stivers, or half a crown, per day, for which they were provided with victuals, drink, and lodging.

On examining the rudder, it was found necessary to unhang it, and take it on shore to repair. They were also delayed for want of caulkers. At length they obtained two workmen from one of the Dutch ships; and the Dutton English East Indiaman coming in from Bengal, Captain Rice obliged Captain Cook with two more, so that by the 26th of April this work was finished; and having got on board all necessary stores, and a fresh supply of provisions and water, they took

ave of t
e next m
At day
they saw
fourteen
road befo
inished s
had not
their emp
with free
Their be
ment the
On the
Governor
shore, he
turned.
Island of
in Cross
the 31st
out ever
being ra
weighed
they we
On t
to the r
Island
they f
steered
coast
On th
distan
and p
churc
road,
tugu
foll
tain
B
got
we

of the Governor, and other principal officers, and the next morning repaired on board.

At day-break in the morning of the 15th of May, they saw the island of St. Helena, at the distance of fourteen leagues; and at midnight anchored in the road before the town. During their stay here, they finished some necessary repairs of the ship, which they had not time to do at the Cape. They also filled all their empty water-casks; and the crew were served with fresh beef, purchased at five pence per pound. Their beef is exceedingly good, and is the only refreshment they had worth mentioning.

On the 21st of May, the Captain took leave of the Governor, and repaired on board. Upon leaving the shore, he was saluted with thirteen guns, which he returned. In the morning of the 28th, they made the Island of Ascension; and the same evening anchored in Cross Bay. They remained here till the evening of the 31st; and, notwithstanding they had several parties out every night, they got but twenty-four turtles, it being rather too late in the season; however, as they weighed between four and five hundred pounds each, they were pretty well off.

On the 31st of May they left Ascension, and steered to the northward. They had a great desire to visit the Island of St. Matthew, to settle its situation; but as they found the wind would not let them fetch it, they steered for the Island of Fernando de Noronha, on the coast of Brazil, in order to determine its longitude.

On the 9th of June, at noon, they made that place, distance six or seven leagues. It appeared in detached and peaked hills, the largest of which looked like a church tower or steeple. When they arrived in the road, a gun being fired from one of the forts, the Portuguese colours were displayed, and the example was followed by all the other forts. Having speedily ascertained the longitude, they stood away without landing.

By the 18th, they made no doubt that they had now got the N. E. trade-wind, as it was attended with fair weather, except now and then some light showers of

rain; and as they advanced to the north, the wind increased, and blew a fresh top-gallant gale. On the 21st, the Captain ordered the still to be fitted to the largest copper, which held about sixty-four gallons. The fire was lighted at four o'clock in the morning, and at six the still began to run. It was continued till six in the evening; in which time they obtained thirty-two gallons of fresh water, at the expence of one bushel and a half of coals, which was about three-fourths of a bushel more than was necessary to have boiled the ship's company's victuals only; but the expence of fuel was no object with them. Upon the whole, this is an useful invention; but the Captain says, he would advise no man to trust wholly to it. For although you may, provided you have plenty of fuel and good coppers, obtain as much water as will support life, you cannot, with all your efforts, obtain sufficient to support health, in hot climates especially, where it is the most wanting.

Nothing worth mentioning happened till the 13th of July, when they made the Island of Fayal, one of the Azores, and soon after that of Pico. At day-break the next morning, they bore away for the Bay of Fayal, or De Horta, where, at eight o'clock, they anchored. The sole design in stopping here, was to give Mr. Wales an opportunity to find the rate of the watch, the better to enable them to fix, with some degree of certainty, the longitude of these islands.

Having left the bay, in the morning of the 19th, they steered for the Island of Tercera, in order to ascertain its length; but the weather coming on very thick and hazy, and night approaching, they gave up the design, and proceeded with all expedition for England. On the 29th of July, they made the land near Plymouth. The next morning they anchored at Spithead; and the same day, Captain Cook landed at Portsmouth, and set out for London, in company with Messrs. Wales, Forsters, and Hodges.

THIRD VOYAGE.

Captain Cook might with honour, after two such celebrated voyages as he had had the command of, have retired from all future toil, and, in the admiration of his country, and the affection of his friends, have met with that reward for his labours and sufferings he so eminently deserved; but he was yet reserved for far greater exertions; he was yet to undergo more afflictions; and he was yet doomed, through treachery, and savage barbarity, to expiate a life of the greatest value to society, and of the most irreproachable goodness.

For many years it had been a favourite scheme with the most celebrated navigators, to discover a shorter and more commodious passage to the oriental regions, than by the Cape of Good Hope. For the conduct of such an enterprise, it was evident, that great skill and abilities were requisite; and though, by the universal voice of mankind, Captain Cook was the best qualified, no one could presume to solicit him on the subject.

As an honourable testimony, however, to his merit and knowledge, it was resolved to ask his advice respecting the most proper person to be entrusted with the conduct of this voyage; and to determine this point, some of the most distinguished naval characters were invited to meet Captain Cook at the house of Lord Sandwich, who then presided over the Board of Admiralty. While the conversation became animated on the subject, Cook's mind was fired with the magnitude of the design, and the consequences likely to result from it. He suddenly started up, under the impression of a noble enthusiasm, and offered his best services to direct the important objects in view. No proposal could have been more grateful. Captain Cook was immediately invested with the command.

This preliminary step settled, the exact plan of the undertaking was next taken into serious consideration,

All former navigators round the globe had returned by the Cape of Good Hope; but to Captain Cook was assigned the arduous task of attempting the same thing by reaching the high northern latitudes between Asia and America; and it appears that this plan was settled in consequence of his own suggestions. His instructions were, to proceed on the Pacific Ocean through that cluster of islands he had before visited within the southern tropic, and thence, if practicable, to make his way into the Atlantic. To give every stimulus to the prosecution of this great design, motives of interest were super-added to the obligations of duty. An act of parliament, which passed in 1745, offering a reward of twenty thousand pounds to such as should discover a passage through Hudson's Bay, was enlarged and explained; and it was now enacted, that if any ship belonging to his Majesty, or his subjects, should find and sail through any passage, by sea, between the Atlantic and Pacific Oceans, in any direction, or parallel, of the northern hemisphere to the northward of the 52d degree of northern latitude, the sum of twenty thousand pounds was to reward such discovery.

The vessels destined for this service were the *Resolution* and the *Discovery*. The command of the former was given to Captain Cook; and that of the latter to Captain Clerke, who had been our navigator's second lieutenant in his former voyage. Nearly the same complement of men and officers was assigned to each as before; and several months were spent in their equipment and preparation, that the health of the seamen, and the success of the expedition, might have every advantage which a liberal and enlightened attention could bestow. And, in order that the inhabitants of Otaheite, and other islands in the South Seas, where the English had been treated with so much hospitality, might be benefited by the voyage, his Majesty was graciously pleased to order some of the most useful European animals to be put on board, for the use of those countries. Added to these, the Captain was furnished with a quantity of garden seeds; and the Board of

Admiralty added such articles of commerce, as were most likely to promote a friendly intercourse with the natives of the other hemisphere, and induce them to open a traffic with the English.

The Indian Omai, who has been mentioned in the preceding voyage, was likewise to be carried back to his native country. It seems he left his friends in London with a mixture of regret and satisfaction. When he reflected on the kindnesses he had received, he could not refrain from tears: but the pleasing idea of revisiting his original connections, soon made his eyes sparkle with joy.

The original voyage, from which our historical account is abstracted, being written in the words of Captain Cook till his lamented death, and afterwards in those of Captain King, who published the whole, we have, for many strong reasons, preferred giving the narrative in the same person; and we trust our readers will see the propriety and advantage of our determination in this respect. Some general descriptions are furnished by Mr. Anderson, the surgeon of the Resolution, a man of distinguished abilities; and to whose talents Captain Cook acknowledges himself much indebted for many interesting parts of his voyage.

Contrary winds, and other circumstances of little consequence, prevented the ships from clearing the Channel till the 14th of July, 1776. On board both vessels were one hundred and ninety-two persons, officers included. Nothing material happened till the 1st of August, when we arrived off Teneriffe, one of the Canaries, where several of the gentlemen landed: On the 4th, we weighed anchor, and proceeded on our voyage. At nine o'clock in the evening of the 10th, we saw the Island of Bonavista, bearing south, distant little more than a league; though, at this time, we thought ourselves much farther off; but this proved a mistake: for, after hauling to the eastward till twelve o'clock, to clear the sunken rocks that lie about a league from the south-east point of the island, we found ourselves, at that time, close upon them; and

did but just weather the breakers. Our situation, for a few minutes, was very alarming. I did not chuse to sound, as that might have heightened the danger, without any possibility of lessening it.

We had, for some days preceding the 6th of October, seen albatrosses, pintadoes, and other peterels; and now we saw three penguins, which occasioned us to sound; but we found no ground with a line of one hundred and fifty fathoms. On the 8th, in the evening, one of those birds which sailors call noddies, settled on our rigging, and was caught. It was something larger than an English blackbird, and nearly as black, except the upper part of the head, which was white, looking as if it were powdered; the whitest feathers growing out from the base of the upper bill, from which they gradually assumed a darker colour, to about the middle of the upper part of the neck, where the white shade was lost in the black, without being divided by any line. It was web-footed, had black legs, and a long black bill. It is said, these birds never fly far from land. We knew of none nearer the station we were in, than Gough's or Richmond's Island, from which our distance could not be less than one hundred leagues. But it must be observed, that the Atlantic Ocean, to the southward of this latitude, has been but little frequented; so that there may be more islands there than we are acquainted with.

On the 18th of October we arrived at the Cape of Good Hope, and found in the bay two French East India ships; the one outward, and the other homeward bound. As soon as we had saluted, I went on shore, accompanied by some of my officers, and waited on the governor, the lieutenant-governor, the fiscal, and the commander of the troops. These gentlemen received me with the greatest civility; and the governor, in particular, promised me every assistance that the place afforded. At the same time, I obtained his leave to set up our observatory; to pitch tents for the sail-makers and coopers; and to bring the cattle on shore, to graze near our encampment. Before I returned on

board, I ordered soft bread, fresh meat, and greens, to be provided, every day, for the ship's company.

Nothing remarkable happened till the evening of the 31st, when it began to blow excessively hard at south-east, and continued for three days; during which time there was no communication between the ship and the shore. The Resolution was the only ship in the bay that rode out the gale without dragging her anchors. We felt its effects as sensibly on shore. Our tents and observatory were torn to pieces; and our astronomical quadrant narrowly escaped irreparable damage. On the 3d of November the storm ceased.

The Discovery having been detained some days at Plymouth, after the Resolution, did not arrive here till the 10th. Captain Clerke informed me, that he had sailed from Plymouth on the 1st of August, and should have been with us here a week sooner, if the late gale of wind had not blown him off the coast. Upon the whole, he was seven days longer in his passage from England than we had been. He had the misfortune to lose one of his marines, by falling overboard; but there had been no other mortality amongst his people, and they now arrived well, and healthy.

While the ships were getting ready, some of our officers made an excursion into the neighbouring country. Having given Captain Clerke a copy of my instructions, and an order directing him how to proceed in case of separation, in the morning of the 30th we repaired on board. At five in the afternoon we weighed, and stood out of the bay. We steered a south-east course, with a very strong gale from the westward, followed by a mountainous sea, which made the ship roll and tumble exceedingly, and gave us a great deal of trouble to preserve the cattle we had on board. Notwithstanding all our care, several goats, especially the males, died; and some sheep. This misfortune was, in a great measure, owing to the cold, which we now began most sensibly to feel.

Nothing very interesting happened from the 5th of Décembre till the 26th of January, when they arrived

at Van Diemen's Land; where, as soon as they had anchored in Adventure Bay, Captain Cook says, I ordered the boats to be hoisted out. In one of them I went myself, to look for the most commodious place for furnishing ourselves with the necessary supplies; and Captain Clerke went in his boat upon the same service. Next morning early, I sent Lieutenant King to the east side of the bay, with two parties, one to cut wood, and the other grass, under the protection of the marines. For although, as yet, none of the natives had appeared, there could be no doubt that some were in our neighbourhood. I also sent the launch for water; and afterwards visited all the parties myself. In the evening, we drew the seine at the head of the bay, and, at one haul, caught a great quantity of fish. Most of them were of that sort known to seamen by the name of elephant fish.

In the afternoon, next day, we were agreeably surprised, at the place where we were cutting wood, with a visit from some of the natives; eight men and a boy. They approached us from the woods, without betraying any marks of fear; for none of them had any weapons, except one, who held in his hand a stick about two feet long, and pointed at one end. They were of common stature, but rather slender. Their skin was black, and also their hair, which was as woolly as that of any native of Guinea; but they were not distinguished by remarkably thick lips, nor flat noses. On the contrary, their features were far from being disagreeable. Most of them had their hair and beards smeared with a red ointment; and some had their faces also painted with the same composition. They received every present we made to them without the least appearance of satisfaction. When some bread was given, as soon as they understood that it was to be eaten, they either returned it, or threw it away, without even tasting it. They also refused some elephant fish, both raw and dressed, which we offered to them. But, upon giving them some birds, they did not return these, and easily made us comprehend that they were

fond of such food. I had brought two pigs on shore, with a view to leave them in the woods. The instant these came within their reach, they seized them as a dog would have done, by the ears, and were for carrying them off immediately, with no other intention, as we could perceive, but to kill them.

Being desirous of knowing the use of the stick which one of our visitors carried in his hand, I made signs to them to shew me; and so far succeeded, that one of them set up a piece of wood as a mark, and threw at it, at the distance of about twenty yards. But we had little reason to commend his dexterity; for, after repeated trials, he was still very wide from the object. Omai, to shew them how much superior our weapons were to theirs, then fired his musket at it; which alarmed them so much, that, notwithstanding all we could do or say, they ran instantly into the woods.

Thus ended our interview with the natives. Immediately after their final retreat, I ordered the two pigs, being a boar and a sow, to be carried about a mile within the woods, at the head of the bay. I saw them left there, by the side of a fresh water brook. A young bull and a cow, and some sheep and goats, were also, at first, intended to have been left by me, as an additional present to Van Diemen's Land. But I soon laid aside all thought of this, from a persuasion that the natives, incapable of entering into my views of improving their country, would destroy them.

The morning of the 29th we had a dead calm, which continued all day, and effectually prevented our sailing. I therefore sent a party over to the east point of the bay to cut grass, and another to cut wood. I accompanied the latter. We had observed several of the natives, this morning, sauntering along the shore, which assured us, that though their consternation had made them leave us so abruptly the day before, they were convinced that we intended them no mischief, and were desirous of renewing the intercourse. It was natural that I should wish to be present on the occasion.

We had not been long landed, before about twenty of them, men and boys, joined us, without expressing the least sign of fear and distrust. There was one of this company conspicuously deformed; and who was not more distinguishable by the hump on his back, than by the drollery of his gestures, and the seeming humour of his speeches, which he was very fond of exhibiting, as we supposed, for our entertainment. His language appeared to me, to be different from that spoken by the inhabitants of the more northern parts of this country, whom I met with in my first voyage; which is not extraordinary, since those we now saw, and those we then visited, differ in many other respects. After staying about an hour with the wooding party and the natives, I went over to the grass-cutters. Having seen the boats loaded, I returned on board to dinner.

Mr. Anderson, with his usual diligence, spent the few days we remained in Adventure Bay, in examining the country. His account of its natural productions, with which he favoured me, will more than compensate for my silence about them.

The only animal of the quadruped kind we got, was a sort of opossum, about twice the size of a large rat. It is of a dusky colour above, tinged with a brown or rusty cast, and whitish below. About a third of the tail, towards its tip, is white, and bare underneath, by which it probably hangs on the branches of trees, as it climbs these, and lives on berries. The kangaroo, another animal found farther northward in New Holland, without doubt, also inhabits here, as the natives we met with had some pieces of their skins; and we several times saw an animal, though indistinctly, run from the thickets when we walked in the woods, which, from the size, could be no other.

There are several sorts of birds, but all so scarce and shy, that they are evidently harassed by the natives, who, perhaps, draw much of their subsistence from them. In the woods, the principal sorts are large brown hawks or eagles; crows, nearly the same as ours

in England; yellowish parroquets; and large pigeons. There are also three or four small birds, one of which is of the thrush kind. On the shore were several common and sea-gulls; a few black oyster-catchers, or sea-pies; and a pretty plover of a stone colour, with a black hood. About the lake, behind the beach, a few wild ducks were seen; and some shags used to perch upon the high leafless trees near the shore.

The sea affords a much greater plenty, and at least as great a variety as the land. Of these the elephant fish, or pejegallo, mentioned in Frezier's Voyage, are the most numerous; and though inferior to many other fish, were very palatable food. Next in number, and superior in goodness, to the elephant fish, was a sort none of us recollected to have seen before: it partakes of the nature both of a round and of a flat fish, having the eyes placed very near each other; the fore part of the body very much flattened, or depressed, and the rest rounded. It is of a brownish, sandy colour, with rusty spots on the upper part, and below. From the quantity of slime it was always covered with, it seems to live after the manner of flat fish, at the bottom.

Upon the rocks are plenty of muscles, and some other small shell-fish. There are also great numbers of sea-stars; some small limpets; and large quantities of sponge; one sort of which, that is thrown on shore by the sea, but not very common, has a most delicate texture.

At eight o'clock in the morning of the 30th of January, a light breeze springing up at west, we weighed anchor, and put to sea from Adventure Bay. We pursued our course to the eastward, without meeting with any thing worthy of note, till the night between the 6th and 7th of February, when a marine belonging to the Discovery fell overboard, and was never seen afterwards.

On the 16th of February, at four in the afternoon, we discovered the land of New Zealand; and soon after came to an anchor in Queen Charlotte's Sound. Here several canoes, filled with natives, came along-

side of the ships ; but very few of them would venture on board ; which appeared the more extraordinary, as I was well known by them all. There was one man, in particular, amongst them, whom I had treated with remarkable kindness during the whole of my stay when I was last here. Yet now, neither professions of friendship, nor presents, could prevail upon him to come into the ship. This shyness was to be accounted for, only on this supposition, that they were apprehensive we had revisited their country in order to revenge the death of Captain Furneaux's people.

On the 13th we set up two tents, one from each ship, on the same spot where we had pitched them formerly. The observatories were at the same time erected ; and Messrs. King and Bayley began their operations immediately. During the course of this day, a great number of families came from different parts of the coast, and took up their residence close to us ; so that there was not a spot in the cove where a hut could be put up, that was not occupied by them, except the place where we had fixed our little encampment.

Besides the natives who took up their abode close to us, we were occasionally visited by others of them, whose residence was not far off ; and by some who lived more remote. Their articles of commerce were, curiosities, fish, and women. The two first always came to a good market ; which the latter did not. The seamen had taken a kind of dislike to these people ; and were either unwilling, or afraid, to associate with them ; which produced this good effect, that I knew no instance of a man's quitting his station to go to their habitations.

Amongst our occasional visiters, was a chief named Kahoorā, who, as I was informed, headed the party that cut off Captain Furneaux's people, and himself killed Mr. Rowe, the officer who commanded. To judge of the character of Kahoorā, by what I had heard from many of his countrymen, he seemed to be more feared than beloved amongst them. Not satis-

fied with
of them
lieve, th
listen to
this ou
the adv
extirpat
hamlet,
the othe

On th
men, in
tain Cl
two of
about th
the eas
Here w
As we
Cove, t
tain Fu
our cur
stances
men ; a
for thi
the qu
withou
of pun
for we
cerned
while a
severa
snatch
they
sued ;
the o
people
those
them,
them
By
of the

fied with telling me that he was a very bad man, some of them even importuned me to kill him: and, I believe, they were not a little surprised that I did not listen to them; for, according to their ideas of equity, this ought to have been done. But if I had followed the advice of all our pretended friends, I might have extirpated the whole race; for the people of each hamlet, or village, by turns, applied to me to destroy the other.

On the 16th, at day-break, I set out with a party of men, in five boats, to collect food for our cattle. Captain Clerke, and several of the officers, Omai, and two of the natives, accompanied me. We proceeded about three leagues up the Sound, and then landed on the east side, at a place where I had formerly been. Here we cut as much grass as loaded the two launches. As we returned down the Sound, we visited Grass Cove, the memorable scene of the massacre of Captain Furneaux's people. Whilst we were at this place, our curiosity prompted us to enquire into the circumstances attending the melancholy fate of our countrymen; and Omai was made use of as our interpreter for this purpose. The natives present, answered all the questions that were put to them on the subject without reserve, and like men who are under no dread of punishment for a crime of which they are not guilty; for we already knew that none of them had been concerned in the unhappy transaction. They told us, that while our people were sitting at dinner, surrounded by several of the natives, some of the latter stole, or snatched from them, some bread and fish, for which they were beat. This being resented, a quarrel ensued; and two New Zealanders were shot dead, by the only two muskets that were fired: for, before our people had time to discharge a third, or to load again those that had been fired, the natives rushed in upon them, overpowered them with their numbers, and put them all to death.

By this time more than two-thirds of the inhabitants of the Sound had settled themselves about us. Great

numbers of them daily frequented the ships, while our people were there melting some seal blubber. No Greenlander was ever fonder of train-oil, than our friends here seemed to be. They relished the very skimmings of the kettle; but a little of the pure stinking oil was a delicious feast. Having got on board as much hay and grass as we judged sufficient to serve the cattle till our arrival at Otaheite, and having completed the wood and water of both ships, on the 24th we weighed anchor, and stood out of the cove.

We had not been long at anchor near Motuara, before three or four canoes, filled with natives, came off to us from the south-east side of the Sound; and a brisk trade was carried on with them for the curiosities of this place. In one of these canoes was Kahoorā, leader of the party who cut off the crew of the Adventure's boat. This was the third time he had visited us, without betraying the smallest appearance of fear. Next morning, he returned again with his whole family, men, women, and children, to the number of twenty, and upwards. Omai was the first who acquainted me with his being along-side the ship, and desired to know if he should ask him to come on board. I told him he might; and accordingly he introduced the chief into the cabin; saying, "There is Kahoorā; kill him!" He afterwards expostulated with me very earnestly, saying, "Why do you not kill him! You tell me, if a man kills another in England, that he is hanged for it. This man has killed ten, and yet you will not kill him; though many of his countrymen desire it; and it would be very good." Omai's arguments, though specious enough, having no weight with me, I desired him to ask the chief why he had killed Captain Furneaux's people? At this question, Kahoorā folded his arms, hung down his head, and looked like one caught in a trap: and I firmly believe he expected instant death. But no sooner was he assured of his safety, than he became cheerful. He did not, however, seem willing to give me an answer to the question that had been put to him, till I had, again and

again, repeated my promise that he should not be hurt. Then he ventured to tell us, that one of his countrymen having brought a stone hatchet to barter, the man to whom it was offered, took it, and would neither return it, nor give any thing for it; on which the owner of it snatched up the bread as an equivalent; and then the quarrel began.

For some time before we arrived at New Zealand, Omai had expressed a desire to take one of the natives with him to his own country. We had not been there many days, before he had an opportunity of being gratified in this; for a youth, about seventeen or eighteen years of age, named Taweiharooa, offered to accompany him. Finding that he was fixed in his resolution to go with us, and having learnt that he was the only son of a deceased chief, I told his mother that, in all probability, he would never return; but this made no impression on either; for when she returned the next morning, to take her last farewell of him, all the time she was on board she remained quite cheerful, and went away wholly unconcerned. Another youth, about ten years of age, accompanied him as a servant, named Kokoa; he was presented to me by his own father, who stripped him, and left him naked as he was born; indeed, he seemed to part with him with perfect indifference.

On the 25th of February we sailed from New Zealand, and had no sooner lost sight of the land, than our two young adventurers repented heartily of the step they had taken. All the soothing encouragement we could think of, availed but little. They wept both in public and private; and made their lamentations in a kind of song, which was expressive of their praises of their country. Thus they continued for many days; but at length their native country and their friends were forgot, and they appeared to be as firmly attached to us, as if they had been born amongst us.

On the 29th of March, as we were standing to the north-east, the Discovery made the signal of seeing land, which we soon discovered to be an island of no

great extent. On approaching the shore, we could perceive with our glasses, that several of the natives were armed with long spears and clubs, which they brandished in the air with signs of threatening; or, as some on board interpreted their attitudes, with invitations to land. Most of them appeared naked, except having a sort of girdle, which, being brought up between the thighs, covered that part of the body. But some of them had pieces of cloth, of different colours, white, striped, or chequered, which they wore as a garment thrown about their shoulders; and almost all of them had a white wrapper about their heads, not much unlike a turban. They were of a tawny colour, and of a middling stature.

At this time a small canoe was launched in a great hurry from the further end of the beach, and putting off with two men, paddled towards us, when I brought to. They stopped short, however, as if afraid to approach, until Omai, who addressed them in the Otaheitean language, in some measure, quieted their apprehensions. They then came near enough to take some beads and nails, which were tied to a piece of wood, and thrown into the canoe. Omai, perhaps improperly, put the question to them, whether they ever eat human flesh? which they answered in the negative, with a mixture of indignation and abhorrence. One of them, whose name was Mouroua, being asked how he came by a scar on his forehead, told us that it was the consequence of a wound he had got in fighting with the people of an island which lies to the north-eastward, who sometimes came to invade them. They afterwards took hold of a rope. Still, however, they would not venture on board.

We now stood off and on; and as soon as the ships were in a proper station, I ordered two boats to sound the coast, and to endeavour to find a landing-place. With this view, I went in one of them myself, taking with me such articles to give the natives, as I thought might serve to gain their good-will. I had no sooner put off from the ship, than the canoe with the two men,

which
boat
into
hesi
enqu
us t
that
unle
or e
nate
botto
W
shore
upon
my b
ance
back
be a
if we
So g
took
came
it diff
preve
their
that
except
witho
and a
Th
them
much
his m
to allo
little
he ha
him in
cabin
His c
looked

which had not left us long before, paddled towards my boat; and, having come along-side, Mourrooa stepped into her, without being asked, and without a moment's hesitation. Omai, who was with me, was ordered to enquire of him where we could land; and he directed us to two different places. But I saw, with regret, that the attempt could not be made at either place, unless at the risk of having our boats filled with water, or even staved to pieces. Nor were we more fortunate in our search for anchorage; for we could find no bottom till within a cable's length of the breakers.

While we were thus employed in reconnoitring the shore, great numbers of the natives thronged down upon the reef, all armed. Mourrooa, who was now in my boat, probably thinking that this warlike appearance hindered us from landing, ordered them to retire back. As many of them complied, I judged he must be a person of some consequence among them. Indeed, if we understood him right, he was the king's brother. So great was the curiosity of several of them, that they took to the water, and swimming off to the boats, came on board them without reserve. Nay, we found it difficult to keep them out; and still more difficult to prevent them carrying off every thing they could lay their hands upon. At length, when they perceived that we were returning to the ships, they all left us, except our original visitor, Mourrooa. He, though not without evident signs of fear, kept his place in my boat, and accompanied me on board the ship.

The cattle, and other new objects, that presented themselves to him there, did not strike him with so much surprise as one might have expected. Perhaps his mind was too much taken up about his own safety, to allow him to attend to other things. I could get but little new information from him; and therefore, after he had made a short stay, I ordered a boat to carry him in toward the land. As soon as he got out of the cabin, he happened to stumble over one of the goats. His curiosity now overcoming his fear, he stopped, looked at it, and asked Omai what bird this was? and

not receiving an immediate answer from him, he repeated the question to some of the people upon deck. The boat having conveyed him pretty near to the surf, he leaped into the sea, and swam on shore. He had no sooner landed, than the multitude of his countrymen gathered round him, as if with an eager curiosity to learn from him what he had seen; and in this situation they remained when we lost sight of them.

After leaving Mangeea, as this island was called, on the afternoon of the 30th, we continued our course northward all that night, and till noon on the 31st, when we again saw land, in the direction of north-east by north, distant eight or ten leagues; and next morning we got abreast of its north end. I sent three armed boats to look for anchoring-ground, and a landing-place. In the mean time we plyed up under the island with the ships. Just as the boats were putting off, we observed several single canoes coming from the shore. They went first to the *Discovery*, she being the nearest ship. It was not long after, when three of the canoes came along-side of the *Resolution*, each conducted by one man. They were long and narrow, and supported by outriggers. Some knives, beads, and other trifles, were conveyed to our visitors; and they gave us a few coconuts, upon our asking for them. But they did not part with them by way of exchange for what they had received from us; for they seemed to have no idea of bartering; nor did they appear to estimate any of our presents at a high rate. With a little persuasion, one of them came on board; and the other two, encouraged by his example, soon followed him. Their whole behaviour marked that they were quite at their ease.

After their departure, another canoe arrived, conducted by a man who brought a bunch of plantains as a present to me; asking for me by name, having learnt it from Omai, who was sent before us in a boat, with Mr. Gore. In return for this civility, I gave him an axe, and a piece of red cloth; and he paddled back to the shore well satisfied. I afterwards understood

from
king,

No
men,
they
one o
word
their
for the
a few
the pr
presen

Our
other
them
attent
near
concep
did no
us to u
made
might
away,
afterw
obtaini
boast.

Soon
coming
course
plantai
brough
every
gratify
he had
they d

I di
from
of the
him, a
preter

from Omai, that this present had been sent from the king, or principal chief of the island.

Not long after a double canoe, in which were twelve men, came towards us. As they drew near the ship, they recited some words in concert, by way of chorus, one of their number first standing up, and giving the word before each repetition. When they had finished their solemn chant, they came along-side, and asked for the chief. As soon as I shewed myself, a pig, and a few cocoa-nuts, were conveyed up into the ship; and the principal person in the canoe made me an additional present of a piece of matting.

Our visitors were conducted into the cabin, and to other parts of the ship. Some objects seemed to strike them with a degree of surprise; but nothing fixed their attention for a moment. They were afraid to come near the cows and horses; nor did they form the least conception of their nature. But the sheep and goats did not surpass the limits of their ideas; for they gave us to understand, that they knew them to be birds. I made a present to my new friend, of what I thought might be most acceptable to him; but, on his going away, he seemed rather disappointed than pleased. I afterwards understood that he was very desirous of obtaining a dog, of which animal this island could not boast.

Soon after day-break, we observed some canoes coming off to the ships, and one of them directed its course to the Resolution. In it was a hog, with some plantains and cocoa-nuts, for which the people who brought them demanded a dog from us, and refused every other thing that we offered in exchange. To gratify these people, Omai parted with a favourite dog he had brought from England; and with this acquisition they departed highly satisfied.

I dispatched Lieutenant Gore with three boats, two from the Resolution, and one from the Discovery. Two of the natives, who had been on board, accompanied him, and Omai went with him in his boat as an interpreter. The ships being a full league from the island

when the boats put off, it was noon before we could work up to it. We then observed a prodigious number of the natives abreast of the boats. In order to observe their motions, and to be ready to give such assistance as our people might want, I kept as near the shore as was prudent. Some of the islanders now and then came off to the ships in their canoes, with a few cocoa-nuts, which they exchanged for whatever was offered to them.

On going on shore, Omai was asked, by the natives, a great many questions concerning us; and, according to the account he gave me, his answers were not a little upon the marvellous. As for instance, he told them, that our country had ships as large as their island; on board which were instruments of war of such dimensions, that several people might sit within them; and that one of them was sufficient to crush the whole island at one shot. This led them to enquire of him, what sort of guns we actually had in our two ships. He said, that though they were but small, in comparison with those he had just described, yet, with such as they were, we could, with the greatest ease, and at the distance the ships were from the shore, destroy the island, and kill every soul in it. They persevered in their enquiries, to know by what means this could be done; and Omai explained the matter as well as he could. He happened luckily to have a few cartridges in his pocket. These he produced; the balls, and the gunpowder which was to set them in motion, were submitted to inspection; and, to supply the defects of his description, an appeal was made to the senses of the spectators. In the centre of a circle formed by the natives, the inconsiderable quantity of gunpowder, collected from his cartridges, was properly disposed upon the ground, and, by means of a bit of burning wood from the oven, where dinner was dressing, set on fire. The sudden blast, and loud report, the mingled flame and smoke, that instantly succeeded, now filled the whole assembly with astonishment; they no longer

doubt
gave f

Omai
story
twenty
heite,
A viol
reach
tended
provisi
ships t
are not
out sus
worn
when
ing by
them i
diately
Of the
still li
here n
their
them b
them
their n

With
Watec
patches
procu
be no
whate
reache
in, and
supply
cocoa
some
of you
called
beaut
black,

doubted the tremendous power of our weapons, and gave full credit to all that Omai had said.

Omai found three of his countrymen here; their story is an affecting one, as related by him. About twenty persons had embarked on board a canoe at Otaheite, to cross over to the neighbouring island Ulieta. A violent contrary wind arising, they could neither reach the latter, nor get back to the former. Their intended passage being a very short one, their stock of provisions was scanty, and soon exhausted. The hardships they suffered, while driven along by the storm, are not to be conceived. They passed many days without sustenance. Their numbers gradually diminished, worn out by famine and fatigue. Four only survived, when the canoe overset. However, they kept hanging by the side of the vessel, till Providence brought them in sight of the people of this island, who immediately sent out canoes, and brought them on shore. Of the four, one was since dead. The other three, still living, spoke highly of the kind treatment they here met with. And so well satisfied were they with their situation, that they refused the offer made to them by our gentlemen, as Omai's request, of giving them a passage on board our ships, to restore them to their native islands.

With a gentle breeze at east, we got up with Wateoo on the 3d of April, and I immediately dispatched Mr. Gore, with two boats, to endeavour to procure some food for our cattle. As there seemed to be no inhabitants here to obstruct our taking away whatever we might think proper, our boats no sooner reached the west side of the island, but they ventured in, and Mr. Gore and his party got safe on shore. The supply obtained here, consisted of about a hundred cocoa-nuts for each ship; we also got for our cattle some grass, and a quantity of the leaves and branches of young cocoa-trees, and of the wharra tree, as it is called at Otaheite. The only birds seen here, were a beautiful cuckoo, of a chesnut brown, veriegated with black, which was shot. And upon the shore, some

egg-birds; a small sort of curlew; blue and white herons; and great numbers of noddies. One of our people caught a lizard, of a most forbidding aspect, though small, running up a tree; and many of another sort were seen.

Though there were, at this time, no fixed inhabitants upon the island, indubitable marks remained of its being, at least, occasionally frequented. In particular, a few empty huts were found. In one of them, Mr. Gore left a hatchet and some nails, to the full value of what we took away. As soon as the boats were hoisted in, I made sail again to the northward. Although Hervey's Island, discovered in 1773, was not above fifteen leagues distant, yet we did not get sight of it till day-break in the morning. As we drew near it, we observed several canoes put off towards the ships. There were from three to six men in each of them. They stopped at the distance of about a stone's throw from the ship; and it was some time before Omai could prevail upon them to come along-side: but no entreaties could induce any of them to venture on board. Indeed, their disorderly and clamorous behaviour, by no means indicated a disposition to trust us, or treat us well. We afterwards learnt, that they had attempted to take some oars out of the *Discovery's* boat that lay along-side, and struck a man who endeavoured to prevent them. They also cut away, with a shell, a net with meat, which hung over that ship's stern, and absolutely refused to restore it; though we afterwards purchased it of them. Those who were about our ship, behaved in the same daring manner. At the same time, they immediately shewed a knowledge of bartering, and sold some fish they had for small nails, of which they were immoderately fond, and called them *goore*. But they caught, with the greatest avidity, bits of paper, or any thing else that was thrown to them.

These people seemed to differ as much in person, as in disposition, from the natives of Wateoon; though the distance between the two islands is not very great.

Their c
fierce,
Zealand
about t
we obs
adopted
amongst
tattooing
had the
same c
nearer
or Man

Havi
fore we
when I
to sound
and on
turned
anchora
land on
quarter
number
with lo
to land
them.

If I h
ply of
had lat
back to
But the
such a s
tle, be
gaining
of our
for the
with ab

Apri
breeze
dieburg
favoura

Their colour was of a deeper cast; and several had a fierce, rugged aspect, resembling the natives of New Zealand. The shell of a pearl oyster, polished, hung about the neck, was the only personal decoration that we observed amongst them; for not one of them had adopted that mode of ornament, so generally prevalent amongst the natives of this ocean, of puncturing, or tatooing, their bodies. Though singular in this, we had the most unequivocal proofs of their being of the same common race. Their language approached still nearer to the dialect of Otaheite than that of Wateoo or Mangeea.

Having but very little wind, it was one o'clock before we drew near the north-west part of the island; when I sent Lieutenant King, with two armed boats, to sound and reconnoitre the coast, while we stood off and on with the ships. At three o'clock, the boats returned; and Mr. King informed me, that there was no anchorage for the ships; and that the boats could only land on the outer edge of the reef, which lay about a quarter of a mile from the dry land. He said, that a number of the natives came down upon the reef, armed with long pikes and clubs. But as he had no motive to land, he did not give them an opportunity to use them.

If I had been so fortunate as to have procured a supply of water, and of grass, at any of the islands we had lately visited, it was my purpose to have stood back to the south, till I had met with a westerly wind. But the certain consequence of doing this, without such a supply, would have been the loss of all the cattle, before we could possibly reach Otaheite, without gaining one advantage with regard to the great object of our voyage. I therefore determined to bear away for the Friendly Islands, where I was sure of meeting with abundance of every thing I wanted.

April the 7th, I steered west by south, with a fine breeze easterly. I proposed to proceed first to Middleburgh, or Eooa; thinking, if the wind continued favourable, that we had food enough on board for the

cattle to last till we should reach that island. But, about noon, next day, those faint breezes, that had attended and retarded us so long, again returned; and I found it necessary to haul more to the north, to get into the latitude of Palmerston's and Savage Islands, discovered in 1774, during my last voyage, that, if necessity required it, we might have recourse to them. At length, at day-break, on the 13th, we saw Palmerston's Island, distant about five leagues. However, we did not get up with it till eight o'clock the next morning. I then sent four boats, with an officer in each, to search the coast for the most convenient landing-place. The boats first examined the south easternmost part, and sailing there, ran down to the east, where we had the satisfaction to see them land. This place is not inhabited.

About one o'clock, one of the boats came on board, laden with scurvy-grass and young cocoa-nut trees, which at this time was a feast for the cattle. Before evening, I went on shore in a small boat, accompanied by Captain Clerke. We found every body hard at work, and the landing-place to be in a small creek. Upon the bushes that front the sea, or even farther in, we found a great number of men-of-war birds, tropic birds, and two sorts of boobies, which at this time were laying their eggs, and so tame, that they suffered us to take them off with our hands.

At one part of the reef, which looks into, or bounds, the lake that is within, there was a large bed of coral, almost even with the surface, which afforded, perhaps, one of the most enchanting prospects that Nature has any where produced. Its base was fixed to the shore, but reached so far in, that it could not be seen; so that it seemed to be suspended in the water, which deepened so suddenly, that, at the distance of a few yards, there might be seven or eight fathoms. The sea was, at this time, quite unruffled; and the sun shining bright, exposed the various sorts of coral, in the most beautiful order. This scene was enlivened by numerous species of fishes gliding along in apparent security.

There v
here; if
found up
ed from

After
leaving
shore, in
next mo
precedin
cattle.
dered e
wind, I
day in
island,
in much
landed.

west sid
and imr
which v
with me
as muc
dinner,
were a
of-war
And in
these c
not on
birds w
the fast
humou

We
entirel
been l
maggo
and a
which
much
and, f
to be
that t

There were no signs of inhabitants having ever been here; if we except a small piece of a canoe that was found upon the beach, which, probably, might have drifted from some other island.

After the boats were laden, I returned on board, leaving Mr. Gore, with a party, to pass the night on shore, in order to be ready to go to work early the next morning. That day was accordingly spent, as the preceding one had been, in collecting food for the cattle. Having got a sufficient supply by sunset, I ordered every body on board. But having little or no wind, I determined to wait, and to employ the next day in trying to get some cocoa-nuts from the next island, where we could observe that those trees were in much greater abundance than where we had already landed. With this view I went with the boats to the west side of the island, and landed with little difficulty; and immediately set the people to gather cocoa-nuts, which we found in great abundance. Omai, who was with me, caught with a scoop net, in a very short time, as much fish as served the whole party on shore for dinner, besides sending some to both ships. Here were also great abundance of birds, particularly men-of-war and tropic birds; so that we fared sumptuously. And it is but doing justice to Omai to say, that, in these excursions, he was of the greatest use: for he not only caught the fish, but dressed these, and the birds we killed, in an oven, with heated stones, after the fashion of his country, with a dexterity and good humour that did him great credit.

We found this islet larger than the other, and almost entirely covered with cocoa palms. A young turtle had been lately thrown on shore here, as it was still full of maggots. We found some scorpions, a few insects, and a great number of fish upon the reefs. The heat, which had been great for about a month, became now much more disagreeable, from the close rainy weather; and, from the moisture attending it, threatened soon to be noxious. However, it is remarkable enough, that though the only refreshment we had received since

leaving the Cape of Good Hope, was that at New Zealand, there was not, yet, a single person on board sick, from the constant use of salt food, or vicissitude of climate.

In the night between the 24th and 25th, we passed Savage Island, which I had discovered in 1774. I steered for the south, and then hauled up for Annamooka. It was no sooner day-light, than we were visited by six or seven canoes from different islands, bringing with them, besides fruits and roots, two pigs, several fowls, some large wood-pigeons, small rails, and large violet-coloured coots. All these they exchanged with us for beads, nails, hatchets, &c. They had also other articles of commerce; but I ordered that no curiosities should be purchased till the ships should be supplied with provisions, and leave given for that purpose. Knowing, also, from experience, that, if all our people might trade with the natives, according to their own caprice, perpetual quarrels would ensue, I ordered that particular persons should manage the traffic both on board and on shore, prohibiting all others to interfere. Before mid-day, Mr. King, who had been sent to Komango, returned with seven hogs, some fowls, a quantity of fruit and roots, and some grass for the cattle. His party was very civilly treated at Komango. The inhabitants did not seem to be numerous; and their huts, which stood close to each other, within a plantain walk, were but indifferent. Not far from them was a pretty large pond of fresh water, tolerably good; but there was no appearance of any stream. With Mr. King came on board the chief of the island, named Tooboulangée; and another, whose name was Taipa. They brought with them a hog, as a present to me, promising more the next day; and they kept their word.

I now resumed the very same station which I had occupied when I visited Annamooka three years before; and, probably, almost in the same place where Tasman, the first discoverer of this, and some of the neighbouring islands, anchored in 1643. The following

day
Too
Om
spot
on s
bart
were
emp
in th
with
horse
were
satisf
the d
Ne
bega
from
We d
he w
encou
mark
quenc
day,
great
and w
of all
obeisa
feet,
hand,
part.
son, r
less t
this g
two f
vants.
appea
thin,
I had
sitor,
me o

day I went on shore, accompanied by Captain Clerke. Toobou, the chief of the island, conducted me and Omai to his house. We found it situated on a pleasant spot, in the centre of his plantation. While we were on shore, we procured a few hogs and some fruit, by bartering; and before we got on board again, the ships were crowded with natives. Few of them coming empty-handed, every necessary refreshment was now in the greatest plenty. I landed again in the afternoon, with a party of marines; and, at the same time, the horses, and such of the cattle as were in a weakly state, were sent on shore. Every thing being settled to my satisfaction, I returned to the ship at sun-set, leaving the command upon the island to Mr. King.

Next day, May 3d, our various operations on shore began. In the morning, before the natives retired from our post, Taipa harangued them for some time. We could only guess at the subject; and judged, that he was instructing them how to behave towards us, and encouraging them to bring the produce of the island to market. We experienced the good effects of his eloquence in the plentiful supply of provisions which, next day, we received. On the 6th, we were visited by a great chief from Tongataboo, whose name was Feenou, and whom Taipa was pleased to introduce to us as king of all the Friendly Isles. All the natives paid their obeisance to him, by bowing their heads as low as his feet, the soles of which they also touched with each hand, first with the palm, and then with the back part. There could be little room to suspect that a person, received with so much respect, could be any thing less than the king. In the afternoon, I went to pay this great man a visit, having first received a present of two fish from him, brought on board by one of his servants. As soon as I landed, he came up to me. He appeared to be about thirty years of age, tall, but thin, and had more of the European features than any I had yet seen here. After a short stay, our new visitor, and five or six of his attendants, accompanied me on board. I gave suitable presents to them all, and

entertained them in such a manner as I thought would be most agreeable. In the evening I attended them on shore in my boat, into which the chief ordered three hogs to be put, as a return for the presents he had received from me.

The first day of our arrival at Annamooka, one of the natives had stolen, out of the ship, a large junk axe. I now applied to Feenou, who was my guest on the 8th, to exert his authority to get it restored to me; and so implicitly was he obeyed, that it was brought on board while we were at dinner. These people gave us very frequent opportunities of remarking what expert thieves they were: even some of the chiefs did not think this profession beneath them. On the lower class a flogging seemed to make no greater impression than it would have done upon the mainmast. When any of them happened to be caught in the act, their superiors, far from interceding for them, would often advise us to kill them. As this was a punishment we did not chuse to inflict, they generally escaped without any punishment at all. Captain Clerke, at last, hit upon a mode of treatment, which, we thought, had some effect. He put them under the hands of the barber, and completely shaved their heads; thus pointing them out as objects of ridicule to their countrymen, and enabling our people to deprive them of future opportunities for a repetition of their rogueries, by keeping them at a distance.

Freenou, understanding that I meant to proceed directly to Tongataboo, importuned me strongly to alter this plan, to which he expressed as much aversion as if he had some particular interest to promote by diverting me from it. In preference to it, he warmly recommended an island, or rather a group of islands, called Hapae, lying to the north-east. There, he assured us, we could be supplied plentifully with every refreshment in the easiest manner; and, to add weight to his advice, he engaged to attend us thither in person. He carried his point with me; and Hapae was made choice of for our next station. As it had never been visited by any

European ships, the examination of it became an object with me.

After some unimportant transactions, at day-break, in the morning of the 16th, we steered north-east for Hapae, which was now in sight. Next day we came to anchor. By this time the ships were filled with the natives. They brought from the shore, hogs, fowls, fruit, and roots, which they exchanged for hatchets, knives, nails, beads, and cloth. I went on shore, accompanied by Omai and Feenou, landing at the north part of Lefooga, a little to the right of the ship's station. The chief conducted me to a hut, situated close to the sea-beach, which I had seen brought thither, but a few minutes before, for our reception. In this Feenou, Omai, and myself, were seated. The other chiefs, and the multitude, composed a circle, on the outside, fronting us; and they also sat down. I was then asked, how long I intended to stay? On my saying, five days, Taipa was ordered to come and sit by me, and proclaim this to the people. He then harangued them, in a speech mostly dictated by Feenou. The purport of it, as I learnt from Omai, was, that they were all, both old and young, to look upon me as a friend, who intended to remain with them a few days; that, during my stay, they must not steal any thing, nor molest me any other way; and that it was expected, they should bring hogs, fowls, fruit, &c. to the ships, where they would receive, in exchange for them, such and such things, which he enumerated. Taipa then took occasion to signify to me, that it was necessary I should make a present to the chief of the island, whose name was Earoupa. I was not unprepared for this; and gave him such articles as far exceeded his expectation. My liberality to him brought upon me demands, of the same kind, from two chiefs of other isles who were present; and from Taipa himself. After viewing the watering-place, we returned to our former station, where I found a baked hog, and some yams, smoking hot, ready to be carried on board for my dinner. I invited Feenou, and his friends,

to partake of it ; and we embarked for the ship ; but none but himself sat down with us at the table. After dinner, I conducted them on shore ; and, before I returned on board, the chief gave me a fine large turtle, and a quantity of yams. Our supply of provisions was copious ; for, in the course of the day, we got, by barter, along-side the ship, about twenty small hogs, besides fruit and roots. Next morning early, Feenou and Omai, who scarcely ever quitted the chief, and now slept on shore, came on board. The object of the visit was, to require my presence upon the island, where I saw a large concourse of people already assembled. I guessed that something more than ordinary was in agitation ; but could not tell what, nor could Omai inform me,

I had not long been landed, before near a hundred of the natives appeared in sight, and advanced, laden with yams, bread-fruit, plantains, cocoa-nuts, and sugar-canes. They deposited their burthens, in two heaps, or piles, upon our left. Soon after arrived a number of others, bearing the same kind of articles, which were collected into two piles upon the right. To these were tied two pigs and six fowls ; and to those upon the left, six pigs and two turtles.

As soon as this munificent collection of provisions was laid down in order, and disposed to the best advantage, the bearers of it joined the multitude, who formed a large circle round the whole. Presently after a number of men entered this circle, or area, before us, armed with clubs, made of the green branches of the cocoa-nut tree. These paraded about for a few minutes, and then retired ; the one half to one side, and the other half to the other side, seating themselves before the spectators. Soon after, they successively entered the lists, and entertained us with single combats. One champion, rising up, and stepping forward from one side, challenged those of the other side, by expressive gestures, more than by words, to send one of their body to oppose him. If the challenge was accepted, which was generally the case, the two com-

batants
began t
other o
were br
victor se
up, and
who see
few wor
side to v
he had a

This e
a few
both wr
perform
second d
England
was, to
begin b
much ar
last abo
up. TH
plause f
the suc
pressed
which,
from en
spirit, an
drubbin
them.
of at le
with th
As s
told me
were a
hand, b
were gi
on boar
would h
over th
cocoa-n

combatants put themselves in proper attitudes, and then began the engagement, which continued till one or other owned himself conquered, or till their weapons were broken. As soon as each combat was over, the victor squatted himself down facing the chief, then rose up, and retired. At the same time, some old men, who seemed to sit as judges, gave their plaudit in a few words; and the multitude, especially those on the side to which the victor belonged, celebrated the glory he had acquired, in two or three huzzas.

This entertainment was now and then suspended for a few minutes. During these intervals there were both wrestling and boxing matches. The first were performed in the same manner as at Otaheite; and the second differed very little from the method practised in England. But what struck us with the most surprise was, to see a couple of lusty wenches step forth, and begin boxing, without the least ceremony, and with as much art as the men. This contest, however, did not last above half a minute, before one of them gave it up. The conquering heroine received the same applause from the spectators, which they bestowed upon the successful combatants of the other sex. We expressed some dislike at this part of the entertainment; which, however, did not prevent two other females from entering the lists. They seemed to be girls of spirit, and would certainly have given each other a good drubbing, if two old women had not interposed to part them. All these combats were exhibited in the midst of at least three thousand people, and were conducted with the greatest good humour on all sides.

As soon as these diversions were ended, the chief told me, that the heaps of provisions on our right hand were a present to Omai; and that those on our left hand, being about two-thirds of the whole quantity, were given to me. He added, that I might take them on board whenever it was convenient; but that there would be no occasion to set any of our people as guards over them, as I might be assured, that not a single cocoa-nut would be taken away by the natives. So it

proved ; for I left every thing behind, and returned to the ship to dinner, carrying the chief with me ; and when the provisions were removed on board in the afternoon, not a single article was missing. There was as much as loaded four boats ; and I could not but be struck with the munificence of Feenou ; for this present far exceeded any I had ever received from any of the sovereigns of the various islands I had visited in the Pacific Ocean. I lost no time in convincing our friend, that I was not insensible of his liberality ; for, before he quitted my ship, I bestowed upon him such of my commodities, as, I guessed, were most valuable in his estimation.

Feenou had expressed a desire to see the marines go through the military exercise. As I was desirous to gratify his curiosity, I ordered them all on shore, from both ships, in the morning. After they had performed various evolutions, and fired several vollies, with which the numerous body of spectators seemed well pleased, the chief entertained us, in his turn, with an exhibition, which, as was acknowledged by us all, was performed with a dexterity and exactness, far surpassing the specimen we had given of our military manœuvres. It was a kind of a dance, so entirely different from any thing I had ever seen, that I fear, I can give no description that will convey any tolerable idea of it to my readers. It was performed by men ; and one hundred and five persons bore their parts in it. Each of them had in his hand an instrument neatly made, shaped somewhat like a paddle, of two feet and a half in length, with a small handle, and a thin blade ; so that they were very light. With these instruments, they made many and various flourishes, each of which was accompanied with a different movement. At first, the performers ranged themselves in three lines ; and by various evolutions, each man changed his station in such a manner, that those who had been in the rear came into the front, Nor did they remain long in the same position. At one time, they extended themselves in one line ; they then formed into a semicircle ; and

lastly
ment
former
whole
Th
rather
ried
two
the d
a cho
joined
of ple
were
body
great
that s
appl
ed an
they
they
held
drum
own.
In
Engli
impre
tainm
and,
of Fe
their
pleas
and
howe
dition
very
soone
a pr
eight
tre of
of la

lastly into two square columns. While this last movement was executing, one of them advanced, and performed an antic dance before me; with which the whole ended.

The musical instruments consisted of two drums, or rather two hollow logs of wood, from which some varied notes were produced, by beating on them with two sticks. It did not, however, appear to me, that the dancers were much assisted by these sounds, but by a chorus of vocal music, in which all the performers joined at the same time. Their song was not destitute of pleasing melody; and all their corresponding motions were executed with so much skill, that the numerous body of dancers seemed to act as if they were one great machine. It was the opinion of every one of us, that such a performance would have met with universal applause on an European theatre; and it so far exceeded any attempt we had made to entertain them, that they seemed to pique themselves upon the superiority they had over us. As to our musical instruments, they held none of them in the least esteem, except the drum: and even that they did not think equal to their own.

In order to give them a more favourable opinion of English amusements, and to leave their minds fully impressed with the deepest sense of our superior attainments, I directed some fire-works to be got ready; and, after it was dark, played them off in the presence of Feenou, the other chiefs, and a vast concourse of their people. Our water and sky-rockets, in particular, pleased and astonished them beyond all conception; and the scale was now turned in our favour. This, however, seemed only to furnish them with an additional motive to proceed to fresh exertions of their very singular dexterity; and our fire-works were no sooner ended, than a succession of dances began. As a prelude to them, a band of music, or chorus of eighteen men, seated themselves before us, in the centre of the circle. Four or five of this band had pieces of large bamboo, from three to five or six feet long;

the upper end open, but the other end closed by one of the joints. With this close end, the performers kept constantly striking the ground, though slowly, thus producing different notes, according to the different lengths of the instruments, but all of them of the hollow base sort; to counteract which, a person kept striking quickly, and with two sticks, a piece of the same substance, split, and laid along the ground, and, by that means, furnishing a tone as acute as those produced by the others were grave. The rest of the band, as well as those who performed upon the bamboos, sung a slow and soft air, which so tempered the harsher notes of the above instruments, that no bystander, however accustomed to hear the most perfect and varied modulation of sweet sounds, could avoid confessing the vast power, and pleasing effect, of this simple harmony.

Soon after they had finished, nine women exhibited themselves, and sat down fronting the hut were the chief was. A man then rose, and struck the first of these women on the back with both fists joined. He proceeded in the same manner to the second and third; but when he came to the fourth, whether from accident, or design, I cannot tell, instead of the back, he struck her on the breast. Upon this a person rose instantly from the crowd, who brought him to the ground with a blow on the head; and he was carried off without the least noise or disorder. But this did not save the other five women from so odd a discipline, or perhaps necessary ceremony; for a person succeeded him, who treated them in the same manner. Their disgrace did not end here; for when they danced, they had the mortification to find their performance twice disapproved of, and were obliged to repeat it.

Curiosity, on both sides, being now sufficiently gratified, by the exhibition of the various entertainments I have described, I began to have time to look about me. Accordingly, next day I took a walk into the island of Leefooga, of which I was desirous to obtain some knowledge. I found it to be, in several respects,

superi
nume
spots
planta
roots
To the
Indian
The
some
side
a reel
which
Wh
try, I
In thi
Tonga
suppos
in the
remark
any en
ship.
all call
never
howev
and at
all alo
king;
make
ship at
took th
In th
moor,
prime-
canoe,
Vavao
days sa
their v
for me
feather
they an

superior to Annamooka. The plantations were more numerous, and more extensive. We observed large spots covered with the paper mulberry-trees: and the plantations, in general, were well stocked with such roots and fruits as are the natural produce of the island. To these I made some addition, by sowing the seeds of Indian corn, melons, pumpkins, and the like.

The island is not above seven miles long; and, in some places, not above two or three broad. The east side of it, which is exposed to the trade wind, has a reef, running to a considerable breadth from it, on which the sea breaks with great violence.

When I returned from my excursion into the country, I found a large sailing canoe fast to the ship's stern. In this canoe was Latooliboula, whom I had seen at Tongataboo during my last voyage, and who was then supposed by us to be the king of that island. He sat in the canoe with all that gravity by which he was so remarkably distinguished at that time; nor could I, by any entreaties, prevail upon him now to come into the ship. Many of the islanders were present; and they all called him Arekee, which signifies king. I had never heard any one of them give this title to Feenou, however extensive his authority over them, both here and at Annamooka, had appeared to be; which had, all along, inclined me to suspect that he was not the king; though his friend, Taipa, had taken pains to make me believe he was. Feenou was on board my ship at the same time; but neither of these great men took the least notice of each other.

In the morning of the 23d, as we were going to unmoor, in order to leave the island, Feenou, and his prime-minister, Taipa, came along-side in a sailing canoe, and informed me, that they were setting out for Vavaoo, an island, which, they said, lies about two days sail to the northward of Hapaee. The object of their voyage, they would have me believe, was to get for me an additional supply of hogs, and some red feathered caps for Omai, to carry to Otaheite, where they are in high esteem. Feenou assured me, that he

should be back in four or five days; and desired me not to sail till his return, when he promised he would accompany me to Tongataboo. I thought this a good opportunity to get some knowledge of Vavaoo, and proposed to him to go thither with the ships; but he seemed not to approve of the plan; and, by way of diverting me from it, told me, that there was neither harbour nor anchorage about it. I therefore consented to wait, in my present station, for his return; and he immediately set out.

In my walk, on the 25th, I happened to step into a house, where I found a woman shaving a child's head with a shark's tooth, stuck into the end of a piece of stick. I observed that she first wetted the hair with a rag dipped in water, applying her instrument to that part which she had previously soaked. The operation seemed to give no pain to the child; although the hair was taken of as close as if one of our razors had been employed. Encouraged by what I now saw, I soon after tried one of those singular instruments upon myself, and found it to be an excellent *succedaneum*. However, the men of these islands have recourse to another contrivance when they shave their beards. The operation is performed with two shells; one of which they place under a small part of the beard, and with the other, applied above, they scrape that part off. In this manner they are able to shave very close. The process is, indeed, rather tedious, but not painful; and there are men amongst them who seem to profess this trade. It was as common, while we were here, to see our sailors go on shore to have their beards scraped off, after the fashion of Hapae, as it was to see their chiefs come on board to be shaved by our barbers.

Finding that little or nothing of the produce of the island was now brought to the ships, I resolved to change our station, and in the afternoon of the 26th of May, I hauled into a bay that lies between the south end of Lefooga and the north end of Hoolaiva, and there anchored. Near the south end of the Island of

Lefooga
size of
other a
remote
and th
At the
have b
two an
told b
length
gata A
the mo
mory o
could
Ab
stern,
Poulah
told us
bouring
inclina
making
I invit
presen
weigh
he wa
spect,
sible n
object
pertin
induce
his cu
which
down
saying
must
but th
than
down
Po
tle, a

Lefooga, we met with an artificial mount. From the size of some trees that were growing upon it, and from other appearances, I guessed that it had been raised in remote times. I judged it to be about forty feet high; and the diameter of its summit measured fifty feet. At the bottom of this mount stood a stone, which must have been hewn off coral rock. It was four feet broad, two and a half thick, and fourteen high; and we were told by the natives present, that not above half its length appeared above ground. They called it Tangata Arekee, and said, that it had been set up, and the mount raised, by some of their forefathers, in memory of one of their kings; but how long since they could not tell.

About noon, a large sailing canoe came under our stern, in which was a person named Futtasaihe, or Poulaho, or both; who, as the natives then on board told us, was king of Tongataboo, and of all the neighbouring islands. It being my interest, as well as my inclination, to pay court to all the great men, without making enquiry into the validity of their assumed titles, I invited Poulaho on board; he brought with him, as a present, two fat hogs, though not so fat as himself. If weight of body could give weight in rank or power, he was certainly the most eminent man, in that respect, we had seen. I found him to be a sedate, sensible man. He viewed the ship, and the several new objects, with uncommon attention; and asked many pertinent questions; one of which was, what could induce us to visit these islands? After he had satisfied his curiosity in looking at the cattle, and other novelties which he met with upon deck, I desired him to walk down into the cabin. To this his attendants objected, saying, that if he were to accept of that invitation, it must happen, that people would walk over his head; but the chief himself, less scrupulous, in this respect, than his attendants, waved all ceremony, and walked down.

Poulaho sat down with us to dinner; but he ate little, and drank less. When we rose from the table, he

desired me to accompany him on shore. I attended the chief in my own boat, having first made presents to him of such articles as, I could observe, he valued much, and were even beyond his expectation to receive. I was not disappointed in my view of thus securing his friendship; for the moment the boat reached the beach, he ordered two more hogs to be brought, and delivered to my people. He was then carried out of the boat, by some of his own people, upon a board resembling a hand-barrow, and went and seated himself in a small house near the shore, which seemed to have been erected there for his accommodation. He placed me at his side; and his attendants seated themselves in a semicircle before us, on the outside of the house. Behind the chief, or rather on one side, sat an old woman, with a sort of fan in her hand, whose office it was to prevent his being pestered with the flies.

I staid till several of his attendants left him, first paying him obeisance, by bowing the hand down to the sole of his foot, and touching or tapping the same, with the upper and under side of the fingers of both hands. Others, who were not in the circle, came, as it seemed, on purpose, and paid him this mark of respect, and then retired, without speaking a word. I was quite charmed with the decorum that was observed. I had no where seen the like, not even amongst more civilized nations.

Poulaho, the king, as I shall now call him, came on board betimes next morning; and brought, as a present to me, one of their caps, made, or at least covered, with red feathers. These caps, or rather bonnets, are composed of the tail feathers of the tropic bird, with the red feathers of the parroquets wrought upon them, or jointly with them. They are made so as to tie upon the forehead without any crown, and have the form of a simicircle, whose radius is eighteen or twenty inches.

At day-break, the next morning, I weighed with a fine breeze, and stood to the westward, with a view to return to Annamooka. We were followed by several

sailing c
quitted
five of
company
boo, who
arrived,
and five
board; s
They bro
they alw
In our
upon a
very fort
ordered
necessary
and alert
The Disc
hazardou
the man
circumsta
they exp
cordingly
a boat, a
after lan
for ancho
Havin
until the
Annamoo
went on
very bus
These v
procured
iron. A
Vavaoo.
hogs, an
from tha
ing weat
perished
any of h
selves, v

sailing canoes, in one of which was the king. He quitted us in a short time; but left his brother, and five of his attendants, on board. We had also the company of a chief, just then arrived from Tongataboo, whose name was Tooboueitoa. The moment he arrived, he sent his canoe away, and declared that he, and five more, who came with him, would sleep on board; so that I had now my cabin filled with visitors. They brought plenty of provisions with them, for which they always had suitable returns.

In our course the ship was very near running full upon a low sandy isle, called Pootoo. It happened, very fortunately, that the people had just before been ordered upon deck, to put the ship about, so that the necessary movements were executed with judgment and alertness; and this alone saved us from destruction. The Discovery being astern, was out of danger. Such hazardous situations are the unavoidable companions of the man who goes upon a voyage of discovery. This circumstance frightened our passengers so much, that they expressed a strong desire to get on shore. Accordingly, as soon as day-light returned, I hoisted out a boat, and ordered the officer who commanded her, after landing them at Kotoo, to sound along the reef for anchorage.

Having met with a convenient station, we lay here until the 4th, when we weighed, and stood away for Annamooka, where we anchored next morning. I went on shore soon after, and found the inhabitants very busy in digging up yams to bring to market. These were now in the greatest perfection; and we procured a good quantity, in exchange for pieces of iron. About noon, next day, Feenou arrived from Vavaoo. He told us that several canoes, laden with hogs, and other provisions, which had sailed with him from that island, had been lost, owing to the late blowing weather; and that every body on-board them had perished. This melancholy tale did not seem to affect any of his countrymen who heard it; and, as to ourselves, we were by this time too well acquainted with



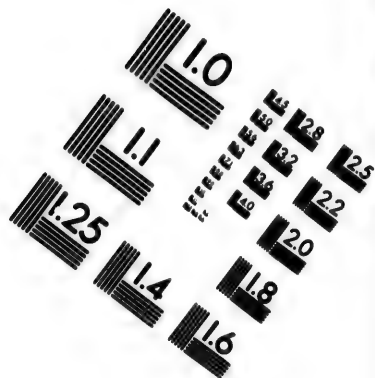
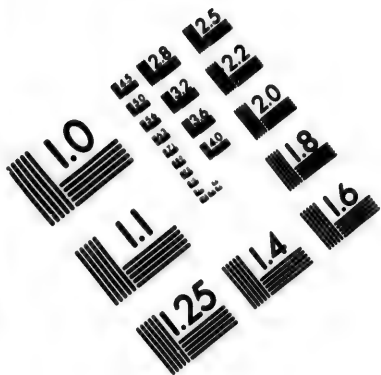
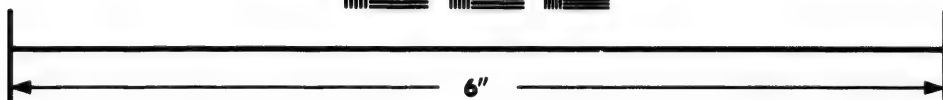
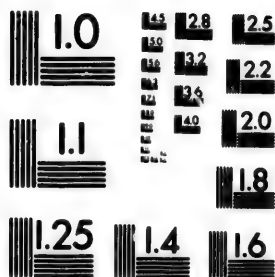


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



**Photographic
Sciences
Corporation**

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WESTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

his character, to give much credit to such a story. The following morning, Poulaho, and the other chiefs, who had been wind-bound with him, arrived. I happened at this time to be on shore, in company with Feenou, who now seemed to be sensible of the impropriety of his conduct, in assuming a character that did not belong to him. For he not only acknowledged Poulaho to be king of Tongataboo, and the other isles, but affected to insist much on it, which, no doubt, was with a view to make amends for his former presumption. I left him to visit this greater man, whom I found sitting with a few people before him. But, every one hastening to pay court to him, the circle increased pretty fast. I was very desirous of observing Feenou's behaviour on this occasion, and had the most convincing proof of his inferiority; for he placed himself amongst the rest that sat before Poulaho, as attendants on his majesty. Both he and Poulaho went on board with me to dinner; but only the latter sat at table. Feenou, having made his obeisance in the usual way, saluting his sovereign's foot with his head and hands, retired out of the cabin. The king had before told us that this would happen; and it now appeared that Feenou could not even eat or drink in his royal presence.

At eight o'clock next morning, we steered for Tongataboo, having a gentle breeze at north-east. About fourteen or fifteen sailing vessels, belonging to the natives, set out with us; but every one of them outran the ships considerably. In the afternoon of next day, we came to an anchor off that island, in a safe station. Soon after I landed, accompanied by Omai, and some of the officers. We found the king waiting for us upon the beach. He immediately conducted us to a small neat house, situated a little within the skirts of the woods, with a fine large area before it. This house, he told me, was at my service during our stay at the island; and a better situation we could not wish for.

We had not been long in the house, before a pretty large circle of the natives were assembled before us,

and seated upon the area. A root of the kava plant being brought, and laid down before the king, he ordered it to be split into pieces, and distributed to several people of both sexes, who began the operation of chewing it; and a bowl of their favourite liquor was soon prepared. In the mean time, a baked hog, and two baskets of baked yams, were produced, and afterwards divided into ten portions. These portions were then given to certain people present; but how many were to share in each I could not tell. The liquor was next served out; but I observed that not a fourth part of the company had tasted either the victuals or the drink.

As I intended to make some stay at Tongataboo, we pitched a tent, in the forenoon, just by the house which Poulaho had assigned for our use. The horses, cattle, and sheep, were afterwards landed; and a party of marines, with their officer, stationed there as a guard. The observatory was then set up at a small distance from the other tent; and Mr. King resided on shore, to attend the observations. The gunners were ordered to conduct the traffic with the natives, who thronged from every part of the island with hogs, yams, cocoa-nuts, and other articles of their produce. In a short time, our land-post was like a fair, and the ships were so crowded with visitors, that we had hardly room to stir upon the decks.

Feenou had taken up his residence in our neighbourhood; but he was no longer the leading man. However, we still found him to be a person of consequence, and we had daily proofs of his opulence and liberality, by the continuance of his valuable presents. But the king was equally attentive in this respect; for scarcely a day passed without receiving from him some considerable donation. We now heard that there were other great men of the island, whom we had not as yet seen. Otago, and Toobou, in particular, mentioned a person named Mareewagee, who, they said, was of the first consequence in the place. Some of the natives even hinted, that he was too great a man to

confer the honour of a visit upon us. This account exciting my curiosity, I mentioned to Poulaho, that I was very desirous of waiting upon Mareewagee; and he readily agreed to accompany me to the place of his residence: but we did not find him at home.

About noon the next day, this chief actually came to the neighbourhood of our post on shore; and with him, a very considerable number of people of all ranks. I was informed that he had taken this trouble, on purpose to give me an opportunity of waiting upon him. In the afternoon, a party of us, therefore, accompanied by Feenou, landed to pay him a visit. We found a person sitting under a large tree, near the shore, a little to the right of the tent. A piece of cloth, at least forty yards long, was spread before him, round which a great number of persons of both sexes were seated. It was natural to suppose that this was the great man; but we were undeceived by Feenou; who informed us, that another, who sat on a piece of mat, a little way from this chief, to the right hand, was Mareewagee, who received us very kindly, and desired us to sit down by him. The person who sat under the tree, fronting us, was called Toobou. Both he and Mareewagee had a venerable aspect. The latter was a slender man, and, from his appearance, seemed to be considerably above three-score years of age. The former was rather corpulent, and almost blind with a disorder in his eyes; though not so old. We entertained them for about an hour, with the performance of two French horns and a drum. But they seemed most pleased with the firing off a pistol, which Captain Clerke had in his pocket. Before I took my leave, the large piece of cloth was rolled up, and, with a few cocoa-nuts, presented to me.

Toward noon, Poulaho returned from the place where we had left him two days before, and brought with him his son, a youth about twelve years of age. I had his company at dinner; but the son, though present, was not allowed to sit down with him. It was very convenient to have him for my guest: for when

he was present, which was generally the case while we staid here, every other native was excluded from the table; and but few of them would remain in the cabin. The king was very soon reconciled to our manner of cookery. But still, I believe, he dined thus frequently with me, more for the sake of what we gave him to drink, than for what we set before him to eat: for he had taken a liking to our wine, could empty his bottle as well as most men, and was as cheerful over it.

Having visited Toobou, and interchanged presents with him, soon after, Feenou came, and acquainted me that young Fattafaihe, Poulaho's son, desired to see me. I obeyed the summons, and found the prince and Omai sitting under a large canopy of the finer sort of cloth, with a piece of the coarser sort spread under them, and before them, that was seventy-six yards long, and seven and a half broad. On one side was a large, old boar; and on the other side a heap of cocoa-nuts. A number of people were seated round the cloth; and amongst them I observed Mareewagee, and others of the first rank. I was desired to sit down by the prince; and then Omai informed me, that he had been instructed by the king to tell me, that as he and I were friends, he hoped that his son might be joined in this friendship; and that as a token of my consent, I would accept of his present. I very readily agreed to the proposal; and it being now dinner time, I invited them all on board.

Accordingly, the young prince, Mareewagee, Toobou, three or four inferior chiefs, and two respectable old ladies, of the first rank, accompanied me. Mareewagee was dressed in a new piece of cloth, on the skirts of which were fixed six pretty large patches of red feathers. This dress seemed to have been made on purpose for this visit; for as soon as he had got on board, he put it off, and presented it to me. Every one of my visitors received from me such presents as, I had reason to believe, they were highly satisfied with. When dinner came upon table, not one of

them would sit down, or eat a bit of any thing that was served up. On expressing my surprise at this, they were all *taboo*, as they said; which word has a very comprehensive meaning; but in general signifies that a thing is forbidden. Dinner being over, and having gratified their curiosity, by shewing to them every part of the ship, I then conducted them on shore.

As soon as the boat reached the beach, Feenou, and some others, instantly sepped out. Young Fattasaihe following them, was called back by Mareewagee, who now paid the heir apparent the same obeisance, and in the same manner, that I had seen it paid to the king. By this time I had acquired some certain information about the relative situations of the several great men whose names have been so often mentioned. I now knew that Mareewagee and Toobou were brothers. Feenou was one of Mareewagee's sons; and Tooboueitoa was another.

The seventeenth was fixed upon by Mareewagee for giving a grand *haiva*, or entertainment, to which we were all invited. For this purpose a large space had been cleared, before the temporary hut of this chief, near our post, as an area where the performances were to be exhibited. In the morning, great multitudes of the natives came in from the country, every one carrying a pole, about six feet long, upon his shoulder; and at each end of every pole a yam was suspended. These yams and poles were deposited on each side of the area, so as to form two large heaps, decorated with different sorts of small fish, and piled up to the greatest advantage. They were Mareewagee's present to Captain Clerke and me. Every thing being thus prepared, about eleven o'clock they began to exhibit various dances, which they called *mau*. The music consisted, at first, of seventy men as a chorus, who sat down; and amidst them were placed three instruments, which we called drums, from their effect. The natives call them *nassu*. These instruments produce a rude, though loud and powerful sound.

thing that
ise at this,
word has a
eral signifies
over, and
ng to them
ed them on

Feenou, and
g Fattafaihe
wagee, who
dance, and in
to the king.
n information
al great men
oned. I now
ere brothers.
; and Too-

areewagee for
to which we
rge space had
of this chief,
performances
g, great mul-
country, every
ong, upon his
ole a yam was
e deposited on
o large heaps,
fish, and piled
ere Mareewa-
Every thing
ock they began
lled *mau*. The
n as a chorus,
placed three in-
om their effect.
struments pro-
sound.

The first dance consisted of four ranks, of twenty-four men each, holding in their hands a little thin, light wooden instrument, about two feet long, and in shape, not unlike a small oblong paddle. With these, which are called *pugge*, they made a great many different motions, all which were accompanied by corresponding attitudes of the body. Their motions were at first slow, but quickened as the drums beat faster; and they recited sentences, in a musical tone, the whole time, which were answered by the chorus; but at the end of a short space they all joined, and finished with a shout; then the rear rank dividing, shifted themselves very slowly round each end, and meeting in the front, formed the first rank; the whole number continuing to recite the sentences as before. The other ranks did the same successively, till that which at first was the front, became the rear; and their evolution continued in the same manner, till the last rank regained its first situation. They then began a much quicker dance, though slow at first, and sung about ten minutes, when the whole body divided into two parts, retreated a little, and then approached, forming a sort of circular figure, which finished the dance.

In a short time, seventy men sat down as a chorus to another dance. This consisted of two ranks, of sixteen persons each, with young Toobou at their head. These danced, sung, and twirled the *pagge* as before; but, in general, much quicker. A motion, that met with particular approbation, was one in which they held the face aside, as if ashamed. The back rank closed before the front one, and that again resumed its place, as in the two former dances. At that instant two men entered very hastily, and exercised the clubs which they use in battle. They did this, by first twirling them in their hands, and making circular strokes before them, with great force and quickness; but so skillfully managed, that, though standing quite close, they never interfered. To them succeeded a person with a spear, in the same hasty manner; looking about eagerly, as if in search of somebody to throw it at. He then ran

hastily to one side of the crowd in the front, and put himself in a threatening attitude, as if he meant to strike with his spear at one of them, bending the knee a little, and trembling, as it were, with rage. He continued in this manner only a few seconds, when he moved to the other side, and having stood in the same posture there, for the same short time, retreated from the ground as fast as when he made his appearance; and various other evolutions were performed with much adroitness.

These dances lasted from eleven till near three o'clock; and though they were, doubtless, intended to shew us a specimen of their dexterity, vast numbers of their own people attended as spectators. Some of us computed that there were not less than ten or twelve thousand within the compass of a quarter of a mile, drawn together, for the most part, by mere curiosity. No pen can describe the numerous actions and motions, the singularity of which was not greater than was the ease and gracefulness with which they were performed; and the whole was conducted with far better order than could have been expected in so large an assembly.

Early in the morning of the 18th, an accident happened that strongly marked one of their customs. A man got out of a canoe into the quarter-gallery of the *Resolution*, and stole from thence a pewter bason. He was discovered, pursued, and brought along-side the ship. On this occasion, three old women, who were in the canoe, made loud lamentations over the prisoner, beating their breasts and faces in a most violent manner; and all this was done without shedding a tear.

This day I bestowed on Mareewagee some presents, in return for those we had received from him the day before; and as the entertainments, which he had then exhibited for our amusement, called upon us to make some exhibition in our way, I ordered a party of marines to go through their exercise on the spot where his dances had been performed; and in the evening,

played off some fireworks at the same place. Poulaho, with all the principal chiefs, and a great number of people of all denominations, were present. The platoon firing, which was executed tolerably well, seemed to give them pleasure; but they were lost in astonishment when they beheld our water rockets. In expectation of this evening show, the circle of natives about our tent being pretty large, they engaged the greatest part of the afternoon in boxing and wrestling. When any of them chuses to wrestle, he gets up from one side of the ring, and crosses the ground in a sort of measured pace, clapping smartly on the elbow joint of one arm, which is bent, and produces a hollow sound; that is reckoned the challenge. If no person comes out from the opposite side to engage him, he returns in the same manner, and sits down; but sometimes stands clapping in the midst of the ground, to provoke some one to come out. If an opponent appears, they come together with marks of the greatest good-nature, generally smiling, and taking time to adjust the piece of cloth which is fastened round the waist. Their combats seldom last long before one gives in. Some of our people ventured to contend with the natives in both these exercises, but were always worsted.

The animals which we had brought were all on shore. Knowing their thievish disposition, I thought it prudent to declare my intention of leaving some of them behind, and even to make a distribution of them previously to my departure. With this view, in the evening of the 19th, I assembled all the chiefs before our house, and my intended presents to them were marked out. To Poulaho, the king, I gave a young English bull and cow; to Mareewagee, a Cape ram and two ewes; and to Feenou, a horse and a mare. As my design, to make such a distribution, had been made known the day before, most of the people in the neighbourhood were then present. I instructed Omai to tell them that there were no such animals within many months sail of their island; that we had brought them,

for their use, from that immense distance, at a vast trouble and expence; and therefore they must be careful not to kill any of them till they had multiplied to a numerous race; and lastly, that they and their children ought to remember that they had received them from the men of Britain. He also explained to them their several uses, and what else was necessary for them to know, or rather as far as he knew; for Omai was not very well versed in such things himself.

Next day I dined on shore. The king sat down with us; but he neither eat nor drank. I found that this was owing to the presence of a female, whom, as we afterwards understood, had superior rank to himself. As soon as this great personage had dined, she stepped up to the king, who put his hands to her feet; and then she retired. He immediately dipped his fingers into a glass of wine, and then received the assistance of all her followers. This was the single instance we ever observed of his paying this mark of reverence to any person. At the king's desire, I ordered some fireworks to be played off in the evening; but, unfortunately, being damaged, this exhibition did not answer expectation.

Some of the officers, belonging to both ships, who had made an excursion into the interior parts of the island, without my leave, and indeed without my knowledge, returned this evening, after an absence of two days. They had taken with them their muskets, with the necessary ammunition, and several small articles of the favourite commodities; all which the natives had the dexterity to steal from them, in the course of their expedition. Feenou and Poulaho, upon this occasion, very justly observed, that if any of my people, at any time, wanted to go into the country, they ought to be acquainted with it; in which case they would send proper persons along with them: and then they would be answerable for their safety. Though I gave myself no trouble about the recovery of the things stolen upon this occasion, most of them, through Feenou's interposition, were recovered; ex-

a vast
ust be
multiplied
their
ceived
ned to
cessary
w; for
nself.

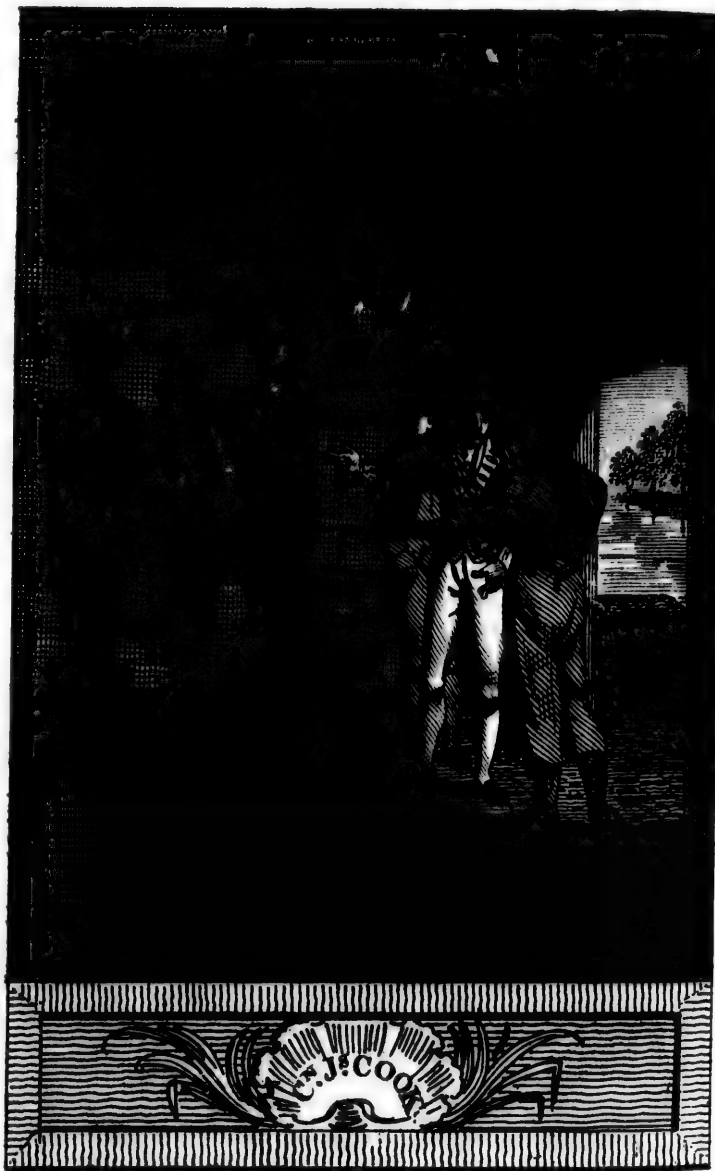
down
nd that
om, as
to him-
ed, she
er feet;
ped his
ed the
ngle in-
k of re-
ordered
ng; but,
did not

ips, who
ts of the
hout my
bsence of
muskets,
small ar-
the na-
, in the
aho, upon
ny of my
country,
hich case
hem: and
ir safety.
ecovery of
of them,
ered; ex-

138

for
trou
care
to a
chil
ther
ther
for
Om
I
wit
thi
we
sel
ste
am
fin
ob
sta
ve
so
u
a

h
i
k
t
y



W. G. de la

Page 189.

J. S. G.

Published by & for I. R. O. 1808

cept
valu
W
wat
ever
5th
solve
orde
fore
acco
in a
grea
we
whic
gula
end
The
put
met
A s
bank
seine
wat
nets
out
leap
L
ceed
a fi
ext
any
tha
pre
a s
Th
the
cor
of
in
the

cept one musket, and a few other articles of inferior value.

We had now recruited the ships with wood and water, and had finished the repairs of our sails. However, as an eclipse of the sun was to happen upon the 5th of July, and it was now the 25th of June, I resolved to defer sailing till that time had elapsed, in order to have a chance of observing it. Having, therefore, some days of leisure before me, a party of us, accompanied by Poulaho, set out early next morning, in a boat, for Mooa, the village where he and the other great men usually reside. As we rowed up the inlet, we met fourteen canoes fishing in company; in one of which was Poulaho's son. In each canoe was a triangular net, extended between two poles; at the lower end of which was a cod, to receive and secure the fish. They had already caught some fine mullets; and they put about a dozen into our boat. I desired to see their method of fishing, which they readily complied with. A shoal of fish was supposed to be upon one of the banks, which they instantly inclosed in a long net like a seine, or set-net. This the fishers, one getting into the water out of each boat, surrounded with the triangular nets in their hands, with which they scooped the fish out of the seine, or caught them as they attempted to leap over it.

Leaving the prince and his fishing party, we proceeded to the bottom of the bay. Here we observed a fiataoka, or burying-place, which was much more extensive, and seemingly of more consequence, than any we had seen at the other islands. We were told that it belonged to the king. It consisted of three pretty large houses, situated upon a rising ground, with a small one at a distance, all ranged longitudinally. They were covered and paved with fine pebbles; and the whole was inclosed by large flat stones of hard coral rock, properly hewn, placed on their edges; one of which stones measured twelve feet in length, two in breadth, and above one in thickness. Within one of these houses were two rude wooden busts of men. On



enquiring what these images were intended for, we were told they were merely memorials of some chiefs who had been buried there, and not the representations of any deity. In one of them was the carved head of an Otaheitean canoe, which had been driven on shore on their coast, and deposited here.

After we had refreshed ourselves, we made an excursion into the country, attended by one of the king's ministers. Our train was not great, as he would not suffer the rabble to follow us. He also obliged all those whom we met upon our progress, to sit down till we had passed; which is a mark of respect due only to their sovereigns. By far the greatest part of the country was cultivated, and planted with various sorts of productions. There were many public and well-beaten roads, and abundance of foot-paths leading to every part of the island. It is remarkable, that when we were on the most elevated parts, at least a hundred feet above the level of the sea, we often met with the same coral rock which is found at the shore; and yet these very spots, with hardly any soil upon them, were covered with luxuriant vegetation. We saw some springs, but the water was either stinking or brackish. When we returned from our walk, which was not till the dusk of the evening, our supper was ready. It consisted of a baked hog, some fish, and yams, all excellently well cooked, after the method of these islands. As there was nothing to amuse us after supper, we followed the custom of the country, and lay down to sleep, our beds being mats spread upon the floor, and cloth to cover us. The king, who had made himself very happy with some wine and brandy which we had brought, slept in the same house, as well as several others of the natives.

Early next morning, they began to prepare a bowl of kava. We had seen the drinking of this liquor sometimes at the other islands; but by no means so frequently as here, where it seems to be the only forenoon employment of the principal people. The kava is a species of pepper, which they cultivate for this

purpose,
grows to
derably,
stalks.
break it
then each
into a pla
liquor, co
a large v
will mak
mixed u
mats are
mediate
these peo
ours, wh
pared, it
cating th
faction,
other sub
it seven
at least s
swallow
afterwar
When
thing ha
having b
faihe, t
nageme
shows
will to
since w
ways,
the nat
or eig
were
sentry
three
and di
this, t
and g

purpose, and esteem it a valuable article. It seldom grows to more than a man's height; it branches considerably, with large heart-shaped leaves, and jointed stalks. The root is the only part that is used. They break it in pieces, scrape the dirt off with a shell, and then each begins and chews his portion, which he spits into a plantain leaf. The person who is to prepare the liquor, collects all these mouthfuls, and puts them into a large wooden dish or bowl, adding as much water as will make it of a proper strength. It is then well mixed up with hands; and some loose stuff, of which mats are made, is thrown upon the surface. The immediate effect of this beverage is not perceptible on these people, who use it so frequently; but on some of ours, who ventured to try it, though so nastily prepared, it had the same power as spirits have in intoxicating them; or rather, it produced that kind of stupefaction, which is the consequence of using opium, or other substances of that kind. I have seen them drink it seven times before noon, yet it is so disagreeable, or at least seems so, that the greatest part of them cannot swallow it without making wry faces, and shuddering afterwards.

When we got on board the ship, I found that every thing had been quiet during my absence, not a theft having been committed; of which Feenou and Futtaihe, the king's brother, who had undertaken the management of his countrymen, boasted not a little. This shews what power the chiefs have, when they have the will to execute it; which we were seldom to expect, since whatever was stolen from us generally, if not always, was conveyed to them. The good conduct of the natives was of short duration; for the next day six or eight of them assaulted some of our people who were sawing planks. They were fired upon by the sentry; and one was supposed to be wounded, and three others taken. These I kept confined all night; and did not dismiss them without punishment. After this, they behaved with a little more circumspection, and gave us much less trouble. This change of beha-

viour was certainly occasioned by the man being wounded; for before they had only been told the effect of fire-arms, but now they had felt it.

On the 30th I visited Futtafaihe, where we spent the night; but we were a good deal disturbed by a singular instance of luxury, in which their principal men indulge themselves; that of being beat while they are asleep. Two women sat by Futtafaihe, and performed this operation, which was called *tooge tooge*, by beating briskly on his body and legs with both fists, as on a drum, till he fell asleep, and continuing it the whole night, with some short intervals. When once the person is asleep, they abate a little in the strength and quickness of beating; but resume it, if they observe any appearance of his awaking. In the morning we found that Futtafaihe's women relieved each other, and went to sleep by turns. In any other country it would be supposed that such a practice would put an end to all rest; but here it certainly acts as an opiate, and is a strong proof of what habit may effect. The noise of this, however, was not the only thing that kept us awake; for the people, who passed the night in the house, not only conversed amongst each other frequently, as in the day, but all got up before it was light, and made a hearty meal on fish and yams, which were brought to them by a person who seemed to know very well the appointed time for this nocturnal refreshment.

I had prolonged my stay at this island on account of the approaching eclipse; but on the 2d of July, on looking at the micrometer belonging to the Board of Longitude, I found some of the rack-work broken, and the instrument useless till repaired, which there was not time to do before it was intended to be used. Preparing now for our departure, I got on board, this day, all the cattle, poultry, and other animals, except such as were destined to remain. The next day we unmoored, that we might be ready to take the advantage of the first favourable wind. The king, who was one of our company this day at dinner, I observed,

took particular notice of the plates. This occasioned me to make him an offer of one, either of pewter or of earthen-ware. He chose the first; and then began to tell us the several uses to which he intended to apply it. Two of them are so extraordinary, that I cannot omit mentioning them. He said that whenever he should have occasion to visit any of the other islands, he would leave this plate behind him at Tongataboo, as a sort of representative in his absence, that the people might pay it the same obeisance they do to himself in person. He was asked what had been usually employed for this purpose before he got this plate; and we had the satisfaction of learning from him, that this singular honour had hitherto been conferred on a wooden bowl in which he washed his hands. The other extraordinary use to which he meant to apply it, in the room of his wooden bowl, was to discover a thief. He said, that when any thing was stolen, and the thief could not be found out, the people were all assembled together before him, when he washed his hands in water in this vessel; after which it was cleaned, and then the whole multitude advanced, one after another, and touched it in the same manner that they touch his foot, when they pay him obeisance. If the guilty person touched it, he died immediately upon the spot; not by violence, but by the hand of Providence; and if any one refused to touch it, his refusal was a clear proof that he was the man.

In the morning of the 5th, the day of the eclipse, the weather was dark and cloudy, with showers of rain, so that we had little hopes of an observation. About nine o'clock, the sun broke out at intervals for about half an hour; after which it was totally obscured, till within a minute or two of the beginning of the eclipse. We were all at our telescopes, viz. Mr. Bayly, Mr. King, Captain Clerke, Mr. Bligh, and myself. I lost the observation by not having a dark glass at hand, suitable to the clouds that were continually passing over the sun; and Mr. Bligh had not got the sun into the field of his telescope; so that the commencement of

the eclipse was only observed by the other three gentlemen.

The general appearance of this country, conveys to the spectator an idea of the most exuberant fertility, whether we respect the places improved by art, or those still in a natural state. At a distance the surface seems entirely clothed with trees of various sizes; the tall cocoa-palms are far from being the smallest ornament to any country that produces them. Of cultivated fruits, the principal are the plantains and bread-fruit. There is plenty of excellent sugar-cane. The only quadruped, besides hogs, are a few rats, and some dogs. Fowls, which are of a large breed, are domesticated here.

On July 6th, we were ready to sail; but the wind being unfavourable, we were under the necessity of waiting two or three days. We took our final leave of Tongataboo on the 10th, and early in the morning of the second day after, reached Middleburgh, or Eooa. We had no sooner anchored, than Taoofoa, the chief, and several other natives, visited us on board, and seemed to rejoice much at our arrival. This Taoofoa knew me when I was here during my last voyage; consequently, we were not strangers to each other. In a little time I went on shore with him, in search of fresh water; the procuring of which was the chief object that brought me to Eooa. I was first conducted to a brackish spring, between low and high water mark, in the cove where we landed. Finding that we did not like this, our friends took us a little way into the island, where, in a deep chasm, we found very good water. But rather than undertake the tedious task of bringing it down to the shore, I resolved to rest contented with the supply the ships had got at Tongataboo. I put on shore at this island, the ram and two ewes, of the Cape of Good Hope breed; intrusting them to the care of Taoofoa, who seemed proud of his charge. As we lay at anchor, this island bore a very different aspect from any we had lately seen, and formed a most beautiful landscape.

The 13th, in the afternoon, a party of us made an excursion to the highest part of the island, in order to have a full view of the country. From the elevation to which we had ascended, we had a full view of the whole island, except a part of the south point. The plains and meadows, of which there are here some of great extent, lie all on the north-west side; and, as they are adorned with tufts of trees, intermixed with plantations, they form a very beautiful landscape in every point of view. While I was surveying this delightful prospect, I could not help flattering myself with the pleasing idea, that some future navigators may, from the same station, behold these meadows stocked with cattle, brought to these islands by the ships of England; and that the completion of this single benevolent purpose, independently of all other considerations, would sufficiently mark to posterity that our voyages had not been useless to the general interests of humanity.

The next morning I planted a pine apple, and sowed the seeds of melons, and other vegetables, in the chief's plantation. I had some encouragement, indeed, to flatter myself that my endeavours of this kind would not be fruitless; for this day there was served up, at my dinner, a dish of turnips, being the produce of the seeds I had left during my last voyage. I had fixed on the 15th for sailing, till Taoofoa pressed me to stay a day or two longer, to receive a present he had prepared for me, consisting of two small heaps of yams, and some fruit, which seemed to be collected by a kind of contribution, as at the other isles. For this liberality I made an adequate return, and soon after weighed.

We now took leave of the Friendly Islands, after a stay of near three months, during which time we lived together in the most cordial friendship. Some accidental differences, it is true, now and then happened, owing to their great propensity to thieving, but too often encouraged by the negligence of our own people. The time employed amongst them was not

thrown away. We expended very little of our sea provisions; subsisting, in general, upon the produce of the islands while we staid, and carrying away with us a quantity of refreshments, sufficient to last till our arrival at another station, where we could depend upon a fresh supply. I was not sorry, besides, to have had an opportunity of bettering the condition of these good people, by leaving the useful animals before-mentioned among them; and, at the same time, those designed for Otaheite, received fresh strength in the pastures of Tongataboo.

But, besides the immediate advantages which both the natives of the Friendly Islands, and ourselves, received by this visit, future navigators from Europe, if any such ever tread our steps, will profit by the knowledge I acquired of the geography of this part of the Pacific Ocean; and the more philosophical reader, who loves to view human nature in new situations, will, perhaps, find matter of amusement, if not of instruction, in the information which I have been enabled to convey to him concerning the inhabitants of this Archipelago. According to the information that we received there, this Archipelago is very extensive. Above one hundred and fifty islands were reckoned up to us by the natives, who made use of bits of leaves to ascertain their number.

The natives of the Friendly Islands seldom exceed the common stature, (though we have measured some who were above six feet,) but are very strong, and yvell made, especially as to their limbs. They are generally broad about the shoulders; and though the muscular disposition of the men, which seems a consequence of much action, rather conveys the appearance of strength than of beauty, there were several to be seen who were really handsome. We met with hundreds of truly European faces, and many genuine Roman noses amongst them. Their eyes and teeth are good; but the last, neither so remarkably white, nor so well set, as are often found amongst Indian nations.

The women are not so much distinguished from the men by their features, as by their general form, which is, for the most part, destitute of that strong, fleshy firmness that appears in the latter. Though the features of some are so delicate, not only to be a true index of their sex, but to lay claim to a considerable share of beauty and expression; for the bodies and limbs of most of the females are well proportioned; and some absolutely perfect models of a beautiful figure. But the most remarkable distinction in the women, is the uncommon smallness and delicacy of their fingers, which may be put in competition with the finest in Europe.

The general colour is a cast deeper than the copper brown; but several of the men and women have a true olive complexion; and some of the last are even a great deal fairer. We saw a man and a boy at Hapae, and a child at Anamooka, perfectly white. Such have been found amongst all black nations; but I apprehend that their colour is rather a disease than a natural phenomenon. Their countenances very remarkably express the abundant mildness or good nature which they possess, and are entirely free from that savage keenness which marks nations in a barbarous state. They are frank, cheerful, and good-humoured; though sometimes in the presence of their chiefs, they put on a degree of gravity, and such a serious air, as becomes stiff and awkward, and has an appearance of reserve. Their peaceable disposition is sufficiently evinced from the friendly reception all strangers have met with who have visited them. Instead of offering to attack them openly, or clandestinely, as has been the case with most of the inhabitants of these seas, they have never appeared in the smallest degree hostile; but, on the contrary, like the most civilized people, have courted an intercourse with their visitors by bartering, which is the only medium that unites all nations in a sort of friendship. Upon the whole, they seem possessed of many of the most excellent qualities that adorn the human mind; such as industry, inge-

nulty, perseverance, affability, and, perhaps, other virtues, which our short stay with them might prevent our observing.

The only defect sullyng their character, that we know of, is a propensity to thieving; to which we found those of all ages, and both sexes, addicted, and to an uncommon degree. Great allowances should be made for the foibles of these poor natives of the Pacific Ocean, whose minds we overpowered with the glare of objects equally new to them, as they were captivating.

The dress of both men and women is the same; and consists of a piece of cloth, or matting, (but mostly the former,) about two yards wide, and two and a half long; at least so long as to go once and a half round the waist, to which it is confined by a girdle, or cord. It is double before, and hangs down like a petticoat, as low as the middle of the leg. The upper part of the garment, above the girdle, is plaited into several folds, so that, when unfolded, there is cloth sufficient to draw up and wrap round the shoulders, which is very seldom done. The inferior sort are satisfied with small pieces; and very often wear nothing but a covering made of leaves of plants, or the maro, which is a narrow piece of cloth, or matting, like a sash. This they pass between the thighs, and wrap round the waist; but the use of it is chiefly confined to the men.

The ornaments worn by both sexes are necklaces, made of the fruit of the pandanus, and various sweet-smelling flowers, which go under the general name of *kahulla*. Others are composed of small shells, the wing and leg-bones of birds, shark's teeth, and other things; all which hang loose upon the breast; rings of tortoise-shell on the fingers; and a number of these joined together as bracelets on the wrists.

Nothing material occurred for some time after we left the Friendly Islands. In the morning of the 8th of August, land was seen, nine or ten leagues distant. As we approached, we saw it every where guarded by a reef of coral rock, extending in some places a full

mile from the land, and a high surf breaking upon it. We also observed people on several parts of the coast; and in a little time after we had reached the lee-side of the island, we saw them launch two canoes, into which above a dozen men got, and paddled towards us. I now shortened sail, as well to give these canoes time to come up with us, as to sound for anchorage. The canoes having advanced to about the distance of a pistol shot from the ships, they stopped. Omai was employed, as he usually had been on such occasions, to use all his eloquence to prevail on the men in them to come nearer; but no entreaties could induce them to trust themselves within our reach. They kept eagerly pointing to the shore with their paddles, and calling to us to go thither; and several of their countrymen, who stood upon the beach, held up something white, which we considered also as an invitation to land. But I did not think proper to risk losing the advantage of a fair wind, for the sake of examining an island which appeared to be of little consequence. For this reason I made sail to the north, but not without getting from them, during their vicinity to our ship, the name of their island, which they called Toobouai.

At day-break, in the morning of the 12th, we saw the island of Maitea. Soon after, Otaheite made its appearance. When we first drew near the island, several canoes came off to the ship, each conducted by two or three men. But, as they were common fellows, Omai took no particular notice of them, nor they of him. At length, a chief, whom I had known before, named Ootee, and Omai's brother-in-law, who chanced to be now at this corner of the island, and three or four more persons, all of whom knew Omai, came on board. Yet there was nothing either tender or striking in their meeting. On the contrary, there seemed to be a perfect indifference on both sides, till Omai having taken his brother down into the cabin, opened the drawer where he kept his red feathers, and gave him a few. This being presently known amongst the rest of the natives upon the deck, the face of affairs was en-

truly turned, and Ootee, who would hardly speak to Omai before, now begged that they might be friends, and exchange names. Omai accepted of the honour, and confirmed it with a present of red feathers; and Ootee, by way of return, sent on shore for a hog. But it was evident to every one of us, that it was not the man, but his property, they were in love with. Such was Omai's first reception among his countrymen. I own I never expected it would be otherwise; but still I was in hopes that the valuable cargo of presents, with which the liberality of his friends in England had loaded him, would be the means of raising him into consequence, and making him respected, and even courted, by the first persons throughout the extent of the Society Islands. This could not but have happened, had he conducted himself with any degree of prudence. But, instead of it, I am sorry to say, that he paid too little regard to the repeated advice of those who wished him well, and suffered himself to be duped by every designing knave.

The important news, of red feathers being on board our ships, having been conveyed on shore by Omai's friends, day had no sooner begun to break next morning, than we were surrounded by a multitude of canoes, crowded with people bringing hogs and fruit to market. At first, a quantity of feathers, not greater than what might be got from a tom-tit, would purchase a hog of forty or fifty pounds weight. But as almost every body in the ships was possessed of some of this precious article of trade, it fell in its value above five hundred per cent. before night.

Soon after we had anchored, Omai's sister came on board to see him. I was happy to observe that, much to the honour of them both, their meeting was marked with expressions of the tenderest affection, easier to be conceived than to be described. This moving scene having closed, and the ship being properly moored, Omai and I went on shore. My first object was to pay a visit to a man, whom my friend represented as a very extraordinary personage indeed, for he said, that he

was the god of Bolabola. We found him seated under one of those small awnings which they usually carry in their larger canoes. He was an elderly man, and had lost the use of his limbs; so that he was carried from place to place upon a hand-barrow. From Omai's account of this person, I expected to have seen some religious adoration paid to him; but, excepting some young plantain trees that lay before him, and upon the awning under which he sat, I could observe nothing by which he might be distinguished from their other chiefs. Omai presented to him a tuft of red feathers, tied to the end of a small stick; but, after a little conversation on indifferent matters with this Bolabola man, his attention was drawn to an old woman, the sister of his mother. She was already at his feet, and had bedewed them plentifully with tears of joy. I left him with the old lady, in the midst of a number of people, who had gathered round him, and went to view a house, said to be built by strangers since I was here before. By an inscription, I found it was erected by some Spaniards that had been lately there in two ships from Lima.

When I returned, I found Omai holding forth to a large company; and it was with some difficulty that he could be got away to accompany me on board; where I had an important affair to settle, in regard to the stated allowance of spirituous liquors; and I had the satisfaction to find, that the crews of both ships unanimously consented to an abridgement in the usual quantity while at this place, that they might not be under the necessity of being put to a short allowance in a cold climate.

The next day we began some necessary operations. I also put on shore the bull, cows, horses, and sheep, and appointed two men to look after them while grazing; for I did not intend to leave any of them at this part of the island. During the two following days it hardly ever ceased raining. The natives nevertheless came to us from every quarter, the news of our arrival having rapidly spread. On the 17th, Omai and I went on shore to pay a formal visit to a young

chief, named Waheia doo, who had come down to the beach. On this occasion, Omai, assisted by some of his friends, dressed himself; not after the English fashion, nor that of Otaheite, nor that of Tongataboo, nor in the dress of any country upon earth; but in a strange medley of all that he was possessed of.

On our landing, Etary, or the god of Bolabola, carried on a hand-barrow, attended us to a large house, where he was set down; and we seated ourselves on each side of him. I caused a piece of Tongataboo cloth to be spread out before us, on which I laid the presents I intended to make. Presently the young chief came, attended by his mother, and several principal men, who all seated themselves at the other end of the cloth, facing us. Then a man, who sat by me, made a speech, consisting of short and separate sentences; part of which was dictated by those about him. He was answered by one from the opposite side near the chief. Etary spoke next; then Omai; and both of them were answered from the same quarter. These orations were entirely about my arrival, and connections with them. The person who spoke last, told me, amongst other things, that he was authorised to make a formal surrender of the province of Tiaraboo to me, and of every thing in it, which marks very plainly, that these people are no strangers to the policy of accommodating themselves to present circumstances. At length the young chief was directed by his attendants to come and embrace me; and, by way of confirming this treaty of friendship, we exchanged names. The ceremony being closed, he and his friends accompanied me on board to dinner.

Having taken in a fresh supply of water, and finished all our other necessary operations, on the 22d I brought off the cattle and sheep, and made ready for sea. On the 23d, we got under sail, and steered for Matavai Bay, where the Resolution anchored the same evening. But the Discovery did not get in till the next morning. About nine o'clock, Otoo, the king of the whole island, attended by a great number of canoes

full of people, came from Oparre, his place of residence, and sent a message on board, expressing his desire to see me. Accordingly I landed, accompanied by Omai, and some of the officers. We found a prodigious number of people assembled on this occasion, and in the midst of them was the king, attended by his father, his two brothers, and three sisters. I went up first, and saluted him, followed by Omai, who kneeled, and embraced his legs. He had prepared himself for this ceremony, by dressing in his very best suit of clothes, and behaved with a great deal of respect and modesty. Nevertheless, very little notice was taken of him. Perhaps envy had some share in producing this cold reception. He made the chief a present of a large piece of red feathers, and about two or three yards of gold cloth; and I gave him a suit of fine linen, a gold-laced hat, some tools, and, what was of more value than all the other articles, a quantity of red feathers, and one of the bonnets in use at the Friendly Islands.

After the hurry of this visit was over, the king, and the whole royal family, accompanied me on board, followed by several canoes, laden with all kinds of provisions, in quantity sufficient to have served the companies of both ships for a week. Soon after the king's mother, who had not been present at the first interview, came on board, bringing with her a quantity of provisions and cloth, which she divided between me and Omai. For, although he was but little noticed at first by his countrymen, they no sooner gained the knowledge of his riches, than they began to court his friendship. I encouraged this as much as I could; for it was my wish to fix him with Otoo. As I intended to leave all my European animals at this island, I thought he would be able to give some instruction about the management of them, and their use. Besides, I knew, and saw, that the farther he was from his native island, he would be the better respected. But unfortunately, poor Omai rejected my advice, and conducted himself in so imprudent a manner, that he soon lost the friend-

ship of Otoo, and of every other person of note in Otaheite.

As soon as we had dined, a party of us accompanied Otoo to Oparre, taking with us the poultry with which we were to stock the island. These I left at Oparre, in the possession of Otoo; and the geese and ducks began to breed before we sailed. We found there a gander, which the natives told us was the same that Captain Wallis had given to Oberea ten years before; several goats; and the Spanish bull, which they kept tied to a tree, near Otoo's house. I never saw a finer animal of his kind. He was now the property of Etary, and had been brought from Oheitepeha to this place, in order to be shipped for Bolabola. But it passes my comprehension how they can contrive to carry him in one of their canoes. If we had not arrived, it would have been of little consequence who had the property of him, as, without a cow, he could be of no use; and none had been left with him. Next day I put on shore three cows, a horse, a mare, and sheep. Having thus disposed of these passengers, I found myself lightened of a very heavy burthen. The trouble and vexation that attended the bringing this living cargo thus far, is hardly to be conceived. But the satisfaction that I felt in having been so fortunate as to fulfil his Majesty's humane design, in sending such valuable animals to supply the wants of two worthy nations, sufficiently recompensed me for the many anxious hours I had passed, before this subordinate object of my voyage could be carried into execution.

As I intended to make some stay here, we set up the two observatories on Matavai Point. Adjoining to them, two tents were pitched, for the reception of a guard, and of such people as it might be necessary to leave on shore in different departments. At this station, I intrusted the command to Mr. King; who, at the time, attended the observations for ascertaining the going of the time keeper, and other purposes.

On the 26th, I had a piece of ground cleared for a garden, and planted it with several articles. Some

melons, potatoes, and two pine-apple plants, were in a fair way of succeeding before we left the place. I had brought from the Friendly Islands several shaddock trees. These I also planted here; and they can hardly fail of success, unless their growth should be checked by the same premature curiosity which destroyed a vine planted by the Spaniards at Oheitepeha. A number of the natives got together to taste the first fruit it bore; but, as the grapes were still sour, they considered it as little better than poison, and it was unanimously determined to tread it under foot. In that state, Omai found it by chance, and was overjoyed at the discovery; for he had a full confidence, that if he had but grapes, he could easily make wine. Accordingly, he had several slips cut off from the tree, to carry with him; and we pruned, and put in order, the remains of it. Probably, grown wise by Omai's instructions, they many now suffer the fruit to grow to perfection, and not pass so hasty a sentence upon it again.

We found here the young man whom we called Oedidee, but whose real name is Heete-heete. I had carried him from Ulietea in 1773, and brought him back in 1774, after he had visited the Friendly Islands, New Zealand, Easter Island, and the Marqueses, and been on board my ship, in that extensive navigation, about seven months. He was tenacious of his good breeding, and 'Yes, Sir,' or, 'If you please, Sir,' were frequently repeated by him. Heete-heete, who is a native of Bolabola, had arrived in Otaheite about three months before, with no other intention, that we could learn, than to gratify his curiosity, or, perhaps, some other favourite passion. It was evident, however, that he preferred the modes, and even garb, of his countrymen, to ours. For though I gave him some clothes, which our Admiralty Board had been pleased to send for his use, (to which I added a chest of tools, and a few other articles, as a present from myself,) he declined wearing them after a few days. This instance may be urged as a proof of the strong propensity na-

tural to man, of returning to habits acquired at an early age, and only interrupted by accident.

In the morning of the 27th, a man came from Oheitepeha, and told us, that two Spanish ships had anchored in that bay the night before; and, in confirmation of this intelligence, he produced a piece of coarse blue cloth, which he said he got out of one of the ships; and which, indeed, to appearance, was almost quite new. He added, that Mateema was in one of the ships; and that they were to come down to Matavai in a day or two. Some other circumstances, which he mentioned, gave the story so much the air of truth, that I dispatched Lieutenant Williamson in a boat to look into Oheitepeha Bay; and, in the mean time, I put the ships into a proper posture of defence. For though England and Spain were at peace when I left Europe, for aught I knew, a different scene might by this time have opened. However, on farther enquiry, the fellow had imposed upon us; and this was confirmed by Williamson's report, as soon as he returned.

Hitherto the attention of Otoo and his people had been confined to us; but next morning a new scene of business opened, by the arrival of some messengers from Eimeo, with intelligence that the people in that island were in arms; and that Otoo's partisans there had been worsted, and obliged to retreat to the mountains. The quarrel between the two islands, which commenced in 1774, had, it seems, partly subsisted ever since. The formidable armament, which I saw at that time, had sailed soon after I then left Otaheite; but the malecontents of Eimeo had made so stout a resistance, that the fleet had returned without effecting much; and now another expedition was necessary.

On the arrival of these messengers, all the chiefs who happened to be at Matavai, assembled at Otoo's house, where I actually was at the time, and had the honour to be admitted into their council. One of the messengers opened the business of the assembly, in a speech of considerable length, in order to excite the

assembled chiefs of Otaheite to arm on the occasion. This opinion was combated by others, who were against commencing hostilities. At length the party for war prevailed. Otoo, during the whole debate, remained silent: Those of the council, who were for prosecuting the war, applied to me for my assistance; and all of them wanted to know what part I would take. Omai was sent for to be my interpreter; but, as he could not be found, I was obliged to speak for myself, and told them, as well as I could, that as the people of Eimeo had never offended me, I could not think myself at liberty to engage in hostilities against them. With this declaration they seemed satisfied.

On our enquiring into the cause of the war, we were told, that, some years before, a brother of Waheia-dooa, of Tieraboo, was sent to Eimeo, at the request of Maheine, a popular chief of that island, to be their king; but that he had not been there a week, before Maheine, having caused him to be killed, set up for himself in opposition to Tierataboonooe, his sister's son, who became the lawful heir; or else had been pitched upon by the people of Otaheite, to succeed to the government on the death of the other. Towha, a man of much weight in the island, happened not to be at Matavai at this time. It, however, appeared, that he was no stranger to what was transacted; and that he entered with more spirit into the affair than any other chief. For, early in the morning of the 1st of September, a messenger arrived from him, to acquaint Otoo, that he had killed a man to be sacrificed to the Eatooa, to implore the assistance of the god against Eimeo. This act of worship was to be performed at the great morai at Attahooroo; and Otoo's presence, it seems, was absolutely necessary on that solemn occasion. I proposed to Otoo that I might be allowed to accompany him. To this he readily consented; and we immediately set out in my boat, with my old friend Potatou, Mr. Anderson, and Mr. Webber; Omai following in a canoe.

As soon as we landed at Attahooroo, which was about two o'clock in the afternoon, Otoo expressed his desire that the seamen might be ordered to remain in the boat; and that Mr. Anderson, Mr. Webber, and myself, might take off our hats as soon as we should come to the morai, to which we immediately proceeded, attended by a great many men and some boys, but not one woman. We found four priests, and their attendants, or assistants, waiting for us.

The ceremonies now began. One of the priests' attendants brought a young plantain tree, and laid it down before Otoo. One of the priests, seated at the morai, now began a long prayer. During this prayer, a man, who stood by the officiating priest, held in his hands two bundles, seemingly of cloth. In one of them, as we afterwards found, was the royal maro; and the other, if I may be allowed the expression, was the ark of the Eatooa. As soon as the prayer was ended, the priests at the morai, with their attendants, went and sat down by those upon the beach, carrying with them the two bundles. Here they renewed their prayers. The dead body was now taken out of a canoe, and laid upon the beach, with the feet to the sea. The priests placed themselves around it, some sitting, and others standing; and one, or more of them, repeated sentences for about ten minutes. It was now laid in a parallel direction with the sea-shore. One of the priests then, standing at the feet of it, pronounced a long prayer, in which he was at times joined by the others, each holding in his hand a tuft of red feathers. In the course of this prayer, some hair was pulled off the head of the sacrifice, and the left eye taken out, both which were presented to Otoo, wrapped up in a green leaf. He did not, however, touch it, but gave to the man who presented it, the tuft of feathers which he had received from Towha. This, with the hair and eye, was carried back to the priests. During some part of this last ceremony, a king-fisher making a noise in the trees, Otoo turned to me, saying, "That is the

Eatooa!" and seemed to look upon it to be a good omen.

The body was then carried a little way with its head toward the morai, and laid under a tree, near which were fixed three broad thin pieces of wood, differently but rudely carved. The bundles of cloth were laid on a part of the morai, and the tufts of red feathers were placed at the feet of the sacrifice, round which the priests took their stations, and we were now allowed to go as near as we pleased. He who seemed to be the chief priest, sat at a small distance, and spoke for a quarter of an hour, but with different tones and gestures, so that he seemed to expostulate with, or question, the dead person, to whom he constantly addressed himself. He then chaunted a prayer, which lasted near half an hour, in a whining, melancholy tone, accompanied by two other priests, and in which Potatou, and some others, joined. In the course of this prayer, some more hair was plucked by the priest from the head of the corpse, and put upon one of the bundles. After this, the chief priest prayed alone, holding in his hand the feathers which came from Towha. When he had finished, he gave them to another, who prayed in like manner. Then all the tufts of feathers were laid upon the bundles of cloth, which closed the ceremony at this place.

The corpse was then carried up to the most conspicuous part of the morai, with the feathers, the two bundles of cloth, and the drums, the last of which beat slowly. The feathers and bundles were laid against the pile of stones, and the corpse at the foot of them. The priests, having again seated themselves round it, renewed their prayers, while some of their attendants dug a hole about two feet deep, into which they threw the unhappy victim, and covered it over with earth and stones. While they were putting him into the grave, a boy squeaked aloud; and Omai said to me, that it was the Eatooa. During this time a fire having been made, a dog was produced, and killed, by twisting his neck, and suffocating him. The hair was singed off,

and the entrails taken out, and thrown into the fire, where they were left to consume. The body of the dog, after being besmeared with blood, and dried over the fire, was, with the liver and heart, carried and laid down before the priests, who sat praying round the grave. They continued their ejaculations over the dog for some time, while two men, at intervals, beat on two drums very loud, and a boy screamed as before, in a loud shrill voice, three different times. This, as we were told, was to invite Eatooa to feast on the banquet that they had prepared for him. As soon as the priest had ended their prayers, the carcase of the dog, with what belonged to it, was laid on a scaffold, about six feet high, that stood close by, on which lay the remains of two other dogs, and of two pigs, which had lately been sacrificed, and at this time emitted an intolerable stench. This kept us at a greater distance than would otherwise have been required of us. When the dog was put upon the scaffold, the priests and attendants gave a kind of shout, which closed the ceremonies for the present. The day being now also closed, we were conducted to a house belonging to Potatou, where we were entertained and lodged for the night. Some other religious rites were performed next day; but on this subject we think we have said enough to satisfy our readers, perhaps to disgust them.

The unhappy victim, offered to the object of their worship, upon this occasion, seemed to be a middle-aged man; and, as we were told, was a towtow; that is, one of the lowest class of the people. But, after all my enquiries, I could not learn that he had been pitched upon on account of any particular crime, committed by him, meriting death. Having had an opportunity of examining the appearance of the body of the poor sufferer now offered up, I should observe, that it was bloody about the head and face, and a good deal bruised upon the right temple, which marked the manner of his being killed: and we were told, that he had been privately knocked on the head with a stone.

Whenever any one of the great chiefs thinks a human sacrifice necessary, on any particular emergency, he pitches upon the victim. Some of his trusty servants are then sent, who fall upon suddenly, and put him to death with a club, or by stoning him. The king is next acquainted with it, whose presence at the solemn rites that follow, is, as I was told, absolutely necessary; and, indeed, on the present occasion, we could observe that Otoo bore a principal part.

Before we parted, we were asked, if the solemnity, at which we had been present, answered our expectations; what opinion we had of its efficacy; and whether we performed such acts of worship in our own country? During the celebration of the horrid ceremony, we had preserved a profound silence; but as soon as it was closed, had made no scruple in expressing our sentiments very freely about it to Otoo, and those who attended him; of course, therefore, I could not conceal my detestation of it in a subsequent conversation with Towha. Omai was made use of as our interpreter; and he entered into our arguments with so much spirit, that this chief seemed to be in great wrath, especially when he was told, that if he had put a man to death in England, as he had done here, his rank would not have protected him from being hanged for it. Upon this he exclaimed, Maeno! Maeno! (Vile! Vile!) and would not hear another word. During this debate, many of the natives were present, chiefly the attendants and servants of Towha himself; and when Omai began to explain the punishment that would be inflicted in England upon the greatest man, if he killed the meanest servant, they seemed to listen with great attention; and were probably of a different opinion from that of their master on this subject.

On the 4th, a party of us dined on shore with Omai, who gave excellent fare, consisting of fish, fowls, pork, and puddings. After dinner, I attended Otoo, who had been one of the party, back to his house, where I found all his servants very busy, getting a quantity of provisions ready for me. Amongst other articles, there

was a large hog, which they killed in my presence. There was also a large pudding, the whole process in making which I saw. It was composed of bread-fruit, ripe plantains, taro, and palm or pandanus nuts, each rasped, scraped, or beat up fine, and baked by itself. A quantity of juice, pressed from cocoa-nut kernels, was put into a large tray, or wooden vessel. The other articles, hot from the oven, were deposited in this vessel, and a few hot stones were also put in to make the contents simmer. Three or four men made use of sticks to stir the several ingredients, till they were incorporated one with another, and the juice of the cocoa-nut was turned to oil, so that the whole mass, at last, became of the consistency of a hasty-pudding. Some of these puddings are excellent; and few, that we make in England, equal them. Otoo's hog being baked, and the pudding, which I have described, being made, they, together with two living hogs, and a quantity of bread-fruit and cocoa-nuts, were put into a canoe, and sent on board my ship, followed by myself, and all the royal family.

In the evening of the 7th we played off some fireworks before a great concourse of people. Some were highly entertained with the exhibition; but by far the greater number of spectators were terribly frightened, insomuch, that it was with difficulty we could prevail upon them to keep together, to see the end of the show. A table-rocket was the last. It flew off the table, and dispersed the whole crowd in a moment; even the most resolute among them fled with precipitation.

Otoo was not more attentive to supply our wants by a succession of presents, than he was to contribute to our amusement by a succession of diversions. A party of us having gone down to Oparre on the 10th, he treated us with what might be called a play. His three sisters were the actresses; and the dresses that they appeared in were new and elegant; that is, more so than we had usually met with at any of these islands. In the evening we returned from Oparre, where we

left Otoo, and all the royal family; and I saw none of them till the 12th; when all, but the chief himself, paid me a visit. He, as they told me, was gone to Attahooroo, to assist this day at another human sacrifice, which the chief of Tiaraboo had sent thither to be offered up at the morai. This second instance, within the course of a few days, was too melancholy a proof how numerous the victims of this bloody superstition are amongst this humane people. I would have been present at this sacrifice too, had I known of it in time, for now it was too late.

The following evening, Otoo returned from exercising this most disagreeable of all his duties as sovereign; and the next day, being now honoured with his company, Captain Clerke and I, mounted on horseback, took a ride round the plain of Matavai, to the very great surprise of a great train of people who attended on the occasion, gazing upon us with as much astonishment as if we had been centaurs. Omai, indeed, had once or twice before this attempted to get on horseback, but he had as often been thrown off before he could contrive to seat himself, so that this was the first time they had seen any body ride a horse. What Captain Clerke and I began, was after this repeated every day while we staid, by one or another of our people. And yet the curiosity of the natives continued still unabated. They were exceedingly delighted with these animals, after they had seen the use that was made of them; and, as far as I could judge, they conveyed to them a better idea of the greatness of other nations, than all the other novelties put together that their European visitors had carried amongst them.

In the morning of the 18th, Mr. Anderson, myself, and Omai, went again with Otoo to Oparre, and took with us the sheep which I intended to leave upon the island, consisting of an English ram and ewe, and three Cape ewes, all which I gave to Otoo. After dining with him, we returned to Matavai, leaving him at Oparre. This day, and also the 19th, we were very sparingly supplied with fruit. Otoo hearing of this, he

and his brother, who had attached himself to Captain Clerke, came from Oparre, between nine and ten o'clock in the evening, with a large supply for both ships. This marked his humane attention more strongly than any thing he had hitherto done for us. The next day all the royal family came with presents; so that our wants were not only relieved, but we had more provisions than we could consume.

Having got all our water on board, the ships being caulked, the rigging overhauled, and every thing put in order, I began to think of leaving the island, that I might have sufficient time to spare for visiting the others in this neighbourhood. With this view we removed from the shore our observatories and instruments, and bent the sails. Early in the morning of the 22d, Otoo and his father came on board, to know when I proposed sailing: for, having been informed that there was a good harbour at Eimeo, I had told them that I should visit that island on my way to Huaheine; and they were desirous of taking a passage with me, and of their fleet sailing at the same time to reinforce Towha. As I was ready to take my departure, I left it to them to name the day; and the Wednesday following was fixed upon, when I was to take on board Otoo, his father, mother, and, in short, the whole family. These points being settled, I proposed setting out immediately for Oparre, where all the fleet, fitted out for the expedition, was to assemble this day, and to be reviewed. I had but just time to get into my boat, when news was brought that Towha had concluded a treaty with Maheine, and had returned with his fleet to Attahoo-roo. This unexpected event made all farther proceedings in the military way quite unnecessary; and the war canoes, instead of rendezvousing at Oparre, were ordered home to their respective districts.

I now returned on board my ship, attended by Otoo's mother, his three sisters, and eight more women. At first, I thought that this numerous train of females came into my boat with no other view than to get a passage to Matavai. But, when we arrived at the

ship; they told me, they intended passing the night on board, for the express purpose of undertaking the cure of the disorder I had complained of, which was a pain of the rheumatic kind. I accepted the friendly offer, had a bed spread for them upon the cabin floor, and submitted myself to their directions. They began to squeeze me with both hands from head to foot, but more particularly on the parts where the pain was lodged, till they made my bones crack, and my flesh became a perfect mummy. In short, after undergoing this discipline about a quarter of an hour, I was glad to get away from them. However, the operation gave me immediate relief, which encouraged me to submit to another rubbing-down before I went to bed; and it was so effectual, that I found myself pretty easy all the night after. My female physicians repeated their prescription the next morning before they went on shore, and again in the evening, when they returned on board, after which I found the pains entirely removed; and the cure being perfected, they took their leave of me the following morning. This they call *romee*; an operation, which, in my opinion, far exceeds the flesh-brush, or any thing of the kind, that we make use of externally. It is universally practised amongst these islanders; being sometimes performed by the men, but more generally by the women.

The war with Eimeo being finally closed, all our friends paid us a visit on the 26th; and, as they knew that we were upon the point of sailing, brought with them more hogs than we could take off their hands: for, having no salt left to preserve any, we wanted no more than for present use. Our friend Omai got one good thing at this island, for the many good things he gave away. This was a very fine double sailing canoe, completely equipped, and fit for the sea. Some time before, I had made up for him a suit of English colours; but he thought these too valuable to be used at this time; and patched up a parcel of colours, such as flags and pendants, to the number of ten or dozen, which he spread on different parts of his vessel, all at

the same time, and drew together as many people to look at her, as a man of war would, dressed, in a European port. These streamers of Omai, were a mixture of English, French, Spanish, and Dutch, which were all the European colours that he had seen.

Omai had also provided himself with a good stock of cloth and cocoa-nut oil, which are not only in greater plenty, but much better at Otaheite, than at any of the Society Islands; insomuch, that they are articles of trade. Omai would not have behaved so inconsistently, and so much unlike himself, as he did in many instances, but for his sister and brother-in-law, who, together with a few more of their acquaintance, engrossed him entirely to themselves, with no other view than to strip him of every thing he had got. And they would undoubtedly have succeeded in their scheme, if I had not put a stop to it in time, by taking the most useful articles of his property into my possession.

On the 28th, Otoo came on board, and informed me, that he had got a canoe, which he desired I would take with me, and carry home, as a present from him to his Majesty, the King of Great Britain, whom he called Earee rahie no Pretane; it being the only thing he said that he could send worth his acceptance. I was not a little pleased with Otoo for this mark of his gratitude. It was a thought entirely his own, not one of us having given him the least hint about it; and it shewed, that he fully understood to whom he was indebted for the most valuable presents he had received. As it was too large for me to take on board, I could only thank him for his good intention; but it would have pleased him much better, if his present could have been accepted.

We were detained here some days longer than I expected, by light breezes from the west. At length, at three o'clock in the afternoon of the 29th, the wind came at east, and we weighed anchor. The frequent visits we had lately paid to this island, seem to have created a full persuasion that the intercourse will not be discontinued. It was strictly enjoined to me by Otoo,

to request, in his name, the Eareë rahie no Pretane, to send him, by the next ships, red feathers, and the birds that produce them; axes; half a dozen muskets, with powder and shot; and by no means to forget horses.

If I could have prevailed upon Omai to fix himself at Otaheite, I should not have left it so soon as I did. For there was not a probability of our being better or cheaper supplied with refreshments at any other place than we continued to be here, even at the time of our leaving it. Besides, such a cordial friendship and confidence subsisted between us and the inhabitants, as could hardly be expected any where else; and it was a little extraordinary, that this friendly intercourse had never once been suspended by any untoward accident, nor had there been a theft committed that deserves to be mentioned.

When the Spanish ships, which had some time before touched here, left the island, four Spaniards remained behind. Two were priests, one a servant, and the fourth made himself very popular among the natives, who distinguish him by the name of Matema. He seems to have been a person who had studied their language; or, at least to have spoken it so as to be understood; and to have taken uncommon pains to impress the minds of the islanders with the most exalted ideas of the greatness of the Spanish nation, and to make them think meanly of the English. He even went so far as to assure them, that we no longer existed as an independent nation; that Pretane was only a small island, which they, the Spaniards, had entirely destroyed; and, for me, that they had met with me at sea, and, with a few shot, had sent my ship, and every soul in her, to the bottom; so that my visiting Otaheite, at this time, was of course very unexpected.

With what design the priests stayed we cannot guess. If it was to convert the natives to the catholic faith, they have not succeeded in any one instance. When they had staid ten months, two ships came to Oheitepeha, took them on board, and sailed again in five days. This

hasty departure shews, that whatever design the Spaniards might have had upon this island, they had now laid it aside; yet, before they went away, they would have the natives believe that they still meant to return, and to bring with them houses, all kinds of animals, and men and women, who were to settle, live and die on the island. Otoo said if the Spaniards should return, he would not let them come to Matavai Fort, which, he said, was ours. It was easy to see that the idea pleased him; little thinking that the completion of it would, at once, deprive him of his kingdom, and the people of their liberties. This shews with what facility a settlement might be made at Otaheite; which, grateful as I am for repeated good offices, I hope will never happen.

We had no sooner anchored at the neighbouring island of Eimeo, than the ships were crowded with the inhabitants, whom curiosity alone brought on board; for they had nothing with them for the purpose of barter. But, the next morning, this deficiency was supplied; several canoes then arriving from more distant parts, which brought with them abundance of bread fruit, cocoa-nuts, and a few hogs. These they exchanged for hatchets, nails, and beads; for red feathers were not so much sought after here as at Otaheite.

In the morning of the 2d of October, Maheine, the chief of the island, paid me a visit. He approached the ship with great caution, and it required some persuasion to get him on board. This chief, who, with a few followers, had made himself, in a manner, independent of Otaheite, is between forty and fifty years old. He is bald-headed; which is rather an uncommon appearance in these islands, at that age. He wore a kind of turban, and seemed ashamed to shew his head. They had seen us shave the head of one of their people, whom we had caught stealing, they therefore concluded that this was the punishment usually inflicted by us upon all thieves; and one or two of our gentlemen, whose heads were not overburthened with hair,

we could observe, lay under violent suspicions of being retos, or thieves.

Having employed two or three days in getting up all our spirit casks, to tar their heads, which we found necessary, to save them from the efforts of a small insect to destroy them, we hauled the ship off into the stream, on the 6th of October in the morning, intending to put to sea the next day; but an accident happened that prevented it. We had sent our goats on shore to graze, with two men to look after them; notwithstanding which precaution, the natives had contrived to steal one of them this evening. The loss of this goat would have been of little consequence, if it had not interfered with my views of stocking other islands with these animals; but this being the case, it became necessary to recover it, if possible; and after much trouble we succeeded.

At Eimeo we abundantly supplied the ships with firewood. We had not taken in any at Otaheite, where the procuring this article would have been very inconvenient; there not being a tree at Matavai but what is useful to the inhabitants. We also got here good store of refreshments. There is a very striking difference in the women of this island and those of Otaheite. Those of Eimeo are of low stature, have a dark hue, and, in general, forbidding features. If we met with a fine woman amongst them, we were sure, upon enquiry, to find that she had come from some other island.

We left Eimeo on the 12th of October, and the next morning we saw Huaheine. At noon, we anchored at the north entrance of Owharre harbour, which is on the west side of the island. Our arrival brought all the principal people of the island to our ships, on the next morning, being the 13th. This was just what I wished, as it was high time to think of settling Omai; and the presence of these chiefs, I guessed, would enable me to do it in the most satisfactory manner. He now seemed to have an inclination to establish himself at Ulietea; and if he and I could have agreed

about the mode of bringing that plan to bear, I should have had no objection to adopt it. His father had been dispossessed by the men of Bolabola, when they conquered Ulietea, of some land in that island, and I made no doubt of being able to get it restored to the son in an amicable manner. For that purpose it was necessary that he should be on good terms with those who now were masters of the island; but he was too great a patriot to listen to any such thing; and was vain enough to suppose that I would reinstate him in his forfeited lands by force. This made it impossible to fix him at Ulietea, and pointed out to me Huaheine as the proper place. I, therefore, resolved to avail myself of the presence of the chief men of the island, and to make this proposal to them.

After the hurry of the morning was over, we got ready to pay a formal visit to Taireetareea the sovereign, meaning then to introduce this business. Omai dressed himself very properly on the occasion; and prepared a handsome present for the chief himself, and another for his Eatooa. Indeed, after he had got clear of the gang that surrounded him at Otaheite, he behaved with such prudence as to gain respect. We waited some time for Taireetareea, as I would do nothing till the Earee rahie came; but when he appeared, I found that his presence might have been dispensed with, as he was not above eight or ten years of age. Omai, who stood at a little distance from this circle of great men, began with making his offering to the gods, consisting of red feathers, cloth, &c. Each article was laid before one of the company, who, I understood, was a priest, and was delivered with a set speech or prayer, spoken by one of Omai's friends, who sat by him, but mostly dictated by himself. In these prayers he did not forget his friends in England, nor those who had brought him safe back. The Earee rahie no Pretane, Lord Sandwich, Toote, Tatee, (Cook and Clarke,) were mentioned in every one of them. When Omai's offerings and prayers were finished, the priest took each article, in the same order in which it had been laid

before him, and, after repeating a prayer, sent it to the morai; which, as Omai told us, was at a great distance, otherwise the offerings would have been made there. These religious ceremonies having been performed, Omai sat down by me, and we entered upon business. Omai's establishment was then proposed to the assembled chiefs.

He acquainted them, "That he had been carried by us into our country, where he was well received by the great King and his Earees, and treated with every mark of regard and affection, while he staid amongst us; that he had been brought back again, enriched by our liberality, with a variety of articles, which would prove very useful to his countrymen; and that, besides the two horses which were to remain with him, several new and valuable animals had been left at Otaheite, which would soon multiply, and furnish a sufficient number for the use of all the islands in the neighbourhood. He then signified to them, that it was my earnest request, in return for all my friendly offices, that they would give him a piece of land, to build a house upon, and to raise provisions for himself and servants; adding, that if this could not be obtained for him in Huaheine, either by gift or by purchase, I was determined to carry him to Ulietea, and fix him there."

One of the chiefs immediately expressed himself to this effect: "That the whole Island of Huaheine, and every thing in it, were mine; and that, therefore, I might give what portion of it I pleased to my friend." Omai was greatly pleased to hear this; thinking, no doubt, that I should be very liberal, and give him enough. But to offer what it would have been improper to accept, I considered as offering nothing at all; and, therefore, I now desired that they would not only assign the particular spot, but also the exact quantity of land, which they would allot for the settlement: and, after a short consultation among themselves, my request was granted by general consent; and the ground immediately pitched upon, adjoining to the house where

our meeting was held. The extent along the shore of the harbour, was about two hundred yards; and its depth, to the foot of the hill, somewhat more; but a proportional part of the hill was included in the grant.

This business being settled to the satisfaction of all parties, I set up a tent on shore, established a post, and erected the observatories. The carpenters of both ships were also set to work to build a small house for Omai, in which he might secure the European commodities that were his property. At the same time, some hands were employed in making a garden for his use. He now began seriously to attend to his own affairs, and repented heartily of his ill-judged prodigality while Otaheite. He found at Huaheine, a brother, a sister, and a brother-in-law; the sister being married. But these did not plunder him, as he had lately been by his other relations. I was sorry, however, to discover, that though they were too honest to do him any injury, they were of too little consequence in the island to do him any positive good. They had neither authority nor influence to protect his person, or his property; and, in that helpless situation, I had reason to apprehend, that he run great risk of being stripped of every thing he had got from us, as soon as he should cease to have us within his reach.

A man who is richer than his neighbours, is sure to be envied by numbers who wish to see him brought down to their own level. But in countries where civilization, law, and religion, impose their restraints, the rich have a reasonable ground of security. It was very different with Omai: he was to live amongst those who are strangers, in a great measure, to any other principle of action, besides the immediate impulse of their natural feelings. But, what was his principal danger, he was to be placed in the very singular situation of being the only rich man in the community to which he was to belong. And having, by a fortunate connection with us, got into his possession an accumulated quantity of a species of treasures which none of his countrymen could create by any art or industry of their own, while

all coveted a share of this envied wealth, it was natural to apprehend, that all would be ready to join in attempting to strip its sole proprietor.

To prevent this, if possible, I advised him to make proper distribution of some of his moveables, to two or three of the principal chiefs; who, being thus gratified themselves, might be induced to take him under their patronage, and protect him from the injuries of others. He promised to follow my advice; and I heard, with satisfaction, before I sailed, that this very prudent step had been taken. Not trusting, however, entirely to the operations of gratitude, I had recourse to the more forcible motive of intimidation. With this view, I took every opportunity of notifying to the inhabitants, that it was my intention to return to their island again, after being absent the usual time; and that if I did not find Omai in the same state of security in which I was now to leave him, all those whom I should then discover to have been his enemies, might expect to feel the weight of my resentment.

While we lay in this harbour, we carried on shore the bread remaining in the bread-room, to clear it of vermin. The number of cock-roaches that infested the ship at this time is incredible; the damage they did us was very considerable; and every method devised by us to destroy them proved ineffectual. According to Mr. Anderson's observations, they were of two sorts, the *blatta orientalis* and *germanica*. The first of these had been carried home in the ship from her former voyage, where they withstood the severity of the hard winter in 1776, though she was in dock all the time. The others had only made their appearance since our leaving New Zealand; but had increased so fast, that when a sail was loosened, thousands of them fell upon the decks. The *orientalis*, though in infinite numbers, scarcely came out but in the night, when they made every thing in the cabin seem as if in motion, from their particular noise in crawling about.

The intercourse of trade, and friendly offices, was carried on between us and the natives, without being

disturbed by any one accident, till the evening of the 22d, when a man found means to get into Mr. Bayley's observatory, and to carry off a sextant unobserved. As soon as I was made acquainted with the theft, I went on shore, and got Omai to apply to the chiefs to procure restitution. He did so; but they took no steps towards it, being more attentive to a heeva that was then acting, till I ordered the performers of the exhibition to desist. They were now convinced that I was in earnest, and began to make some enquiry after the thief, who was sitting in the midst of them, quite unconcerned, insomuch that I was in great doubt of his being the guilty person, especially as he denied it. Omai, however, assuring me that he was the man, I sent him on board the ship, and there confined him. This raised a general ferment amongst the assembled natives; and the whole body fled, in spite of all my endeavours to stop them. Having employed Omai to examine the prisoner, with some difficulty he was brought to confess where he had hid the sextant; but, as it was now dark, we could not find it till day-light the next morning, when it was brought back unhurt. After this, the natives recovered from their fright, and began to gather about us as usual. As the thief seemed to be a very hardened fellow, I punished him with some severity.

This, however, did not deter him; for, in the night, between the 24th and 25th, a general alarm was spread, occasioned, as was said, by one of our goats being stolen by this very man. On examination, we found that all was safe in that quarter. Probably, the goats were so well guarded, that he could not put his design in execution. But his hostilities had succeeded against another object; and it appeared that he had destroyed and carried off several vines and cabbage plants in Omai's grounds; and he publicly threatened to kill him, and to burn his house, as soon as we should leave the island. To prevent the fellow's doing me and Omai any more mischief, I had him seized, and confined again on board the ship, with a view of carrying him off the island; and it seemed to

give general satisfaction to the chiefs, that I meant thus to dispose of him.

Omai's house being nearly finished, many of his moveables were carried on shore on the 26th. Amongst a variety of other useless articles, was a box of toys, which, when exposed to public view, seemed greatly to please the gazing multitude. But as to his pots, kettles, dishes, plates, drinking-mugs, glasses, and the whole train of our domestic accommodations, hardly any one of his countrymen would so much as look at them. Omai himself now began to think that they were of no manner of use to him; that a baked hog was more savory food than a boiled one; that a plantain leaf made as good a dish or plate as pewter; and that a cocoa-nut shell was as convenient a goblet as a black jack. And therefore, he very wisely disposed of as many of these articles of English furniture, for the kitchen and pantry, as he could find purchasers for, amongst the people of the ships; receiving from them, in return, hatchets, and other iron tools, which had a more intrinsic value in this part of the world, and added more to his distinguishing superiority over those with whom he was to pass the remainder of his days.

Early in the morning of the 30th, the Bolabola man, whom I had in confinement, found means to make his escape out of the ship. Upon enquiry, it appeared, that not only the sentry placed over the prisoner, but the whole watch, upon the quarter deck, where he was confined, had laid themselves down to sleep. He seized the opportunity to take the key of the irons out of the binnacle drawer, where he had seen it put, and set himself at liberty. I was not a little pleased to hear, afterward, that this fellow had transported himself to Ulie-tea.

As soon as Omai was settled in his new habitation, I began to think of leaving the island; and got every thing off from the shore this evening, except the horse and mare, and a goat big with kid; which were left in the possession of our friend, with whom we were now finally to part. I also gave him a boar and two sows of

the English breed; and he had got a sow or two of his own.

The history of Omai will, perhaps, interest a very numerous class of readers, more than any other occurrence of the voyage. Every circumstance, therefore, which may serve to convey a satisfactory account of the exact situation in which he was left, will be thought worth preserving; and the following particulars are added, to complete the view of his domestic establishment. He had picked up, at Otaheite, four or five Toutous; the two New Zealand youths remained with him; and his brother, and some others, joined him at Huaheine; so that his family consisted already of eight or ten persons; if that can be called family, to which not a single female, as yet, belonged. At present Omai did not seem at all disposed to take unto himself a wife.

The house that we erected for him was twenty-four feet by eighteen; and ten feet high. It was settled that, immediately after our departure, he should begin to build a large house, after the fashion of his country, one end of which was to be brought over that which we had erected, so as to inclose it entirely, for greater security. In this work, some of the chiefs promised to assist him; and, if the intended building should cover the ground which he marked out, it will be as large as most upon the island. His European weapons consisted of a musket, bayonet, and cartouch box; a fowling-piece; two pair of pistols; and two or three swords or cutlasses. The possession of these made him quite happy; which was my only view in giving him such presents. For I was always of opinion, that he would have been happier without fire-arms, and other European weapons, than with them; as such implements of war, in the hands of one whose prudent use of them I had some grounds for mistrusting, would rather increase his dangers than establish his superiority. After he had got on shore every thing that belonged to him, and was settled in his house, he had most of the officers of both ships, two or three times, to dinner; and his table was

always
the isla
Befo
upon t

G
N

On
I took
up at
friends
sail;
guns
cept
hour
tionate
self w
his ut
King,
the tin
to ref
very s
the str
we le
before

Om
sight
what
of rich
return
recom
on wh
piness
disting
pertin
less a
be des
exerci

always well supplied with the very best provisions that the island produced.

Before I sailed, I had the following inscription cut upon the outside of his house :

Georgius Tertius, Rex, 2 Novembris, 1777.

Naves { Resolution, Jac. Cook, Pr.
 { Discovery, Car. Clerke, Pr.

On the 2nd of November, at four in the afternoon, I took the advantage of a breeze, which then sprung up at east, and sailed out of the harbour. Most of our friends remained on board till the ships were under sail ; when, to gratify their curiosity, I ordered five guns to be fired. They then all took their leave, except Omai, who remained till we were at sea. In an hour or two after he went on shore, taking a very affectionate farewell of all the officers. He sustained himself with a manly resolution, till he came to me. Then his utmost efforts to conceal his tears failed ; and Mr. King, who went in the boat, told me that he wept all the time in going on shore. It was no small satisfaction to reflect, that we had brought him safe back to the very spot from which he was taken. And yet, such is the strange nature of human affairs, that it is probable we left him in a less desirable situation than he was in before his connection with us.

Omai, from being much caressed in England, lost sight of his original condition ; and never considered in what manner his acquisitions, either of knowledge or of riches, would be estimated by his countrymen at his return ; which were the only things he could have to recommend him to them now, more than before, and on which he could build his future greatness or happiness. Rank seems to be the very foundation of all distinction here, and of its attendant, power ; and, so pertinaciously, or rather blindly, adhered to, that, unless a person has some degree of it, he will certainly be despised and hated, if he assumes the appearance of exercising any authority. This was really the case, in

some measure, with Omai; though his countrymen were pretty cautious of expressing their sentiments while we remained amongst them. Had he made a proper use of the presents he brought with him from England, this, with the knowledge he had acquired by travelling so far, might have enabled him to form the most useful connections. But we have already given instances of his childish inattention to this obvious means of advancing his interest. His schemes seemed to be of a higher, though ridiculous, nature; indeed, I might say, meaner; for revenge, rather than a desire of becoming great, appeared to actuate him from the beginning. This, however, may be excused, if we consider that it is common to his countrymen. His father was, doubtless, a man of considerable property in Ulietea, when that island was conquered by those of Bolabola; and, with many others, sought refuge in Huaheine, where he died, and left Omai, with some other children, who, by that means, became totally dependant. In this situation he was taken up by Captain Furneaux, and carried to England. Whether he really expected, from his treatment there, that any assistance would be given him against the enemies of his father and his country, or whether he imagined that his own personal courage, and superiority of knowledge, would be sufficient to dispossess the conquerors of Ulietea, is uncertain; but from the beginning of the voyage, this was his constant theme. He would not listen to our remonstrances on so wild a determination; but flew into a passion; if more moderate and reasonable counsels were proposed for his advantage. As we advanced, however, on our voyage, he became more sensible of his error; and, by the time we reached the Friendly Islands, had even such apprehensions of his reception at home, that he would fain have staid behind at Tongataboo, under Fenou's protection. At these islands he squandered away much of his European treasure, very unnecessarily. At Matavai, he continued the same inconsiderate behaviour, till I absolutely put a stop to his profusion.

Whether the remains of his European wealth, which, after all his improvident waste, was still considerable, will be more prudently administered by him, or whether the steps I took, as already explained, to insure him protection in Huaheine, shall have proved effectual, must be left to the decision of future navigators of this ocean; with whom it cannot but be a principal object of curiosity to trace the future fortunes of our traveller. Whatever faults belonged to Omai's character, they were more than overbalanced by his great good-nature, and docile disposition. During the whole time he was with me, I very seldom had reason to be seriously displeased with his general conduct. His grateful heart always retained the highest sense of the favours he had received in England; nor will he ever forget those who honoured him with their protection and friendship during his stay there. He had a tolerable share of understanding, but wanted application and perseverance to exert it; so that his knowledge of things was very general, and, in many instances, imperfect. He was not a man of much observation. There were many useful arts, as well as elegant amusements, amongst the people of the Friendly Islands, which he might have conveyed to his own, where they probably would have been readily adopted, as being so much in their own way. But I never found that he used the least endeavour to make himself master of any one. This kind of indifference is, indeed, the characteristic foible of his nation. We are not, therefore, to expect that Omai will be able to introduce many of our arts and customs amongst them, or much improve those to which they have been long habituated. I am confident, however, that he will endeavour to bring to perfection, the various fruits and vegetables we planted, which will be no small acquisition. But the greatest benefit these islands are likely to receive from Omai's travels, will be in the animals that have been left upon them; which, probably, they never would have got, had he not come to England. When these multiply, of which I think there is little doubt, Orahete, and the Society

Islands, will equal, if not exceed, any place in the known world, for provisions.

Omai's return, and the substantial proofs he brought back with him of our liberality, encouraged many to offer themselves as volunteers to attend me to Pretane. I took every opportunity of expressing my determination to reject all such applications. If there had been the most distant probability of any ship being again sent to New Zealand, I would have brought the two youths of that country home with me, as both of them were very desirous of continuing with us. Tiarooa, the eldest, was an exceedingly well-disposed young man, with strong natural sense, and capable of receiving any instruction. He seemed to be fully sensible of the inferiority of his own country to these islands, and resigned himself, though perhaps with reluctance, to end his days in ease and plenty, in Huaheine. But the other was so strongly attached to us, that he was taken out of the ship, and carried on shore by force. He was a witty, smart boy; and on that account much noticed on board.

The boat which carried Omai on shore, (never to join us again,) having returned to the ship, we hoisted her in, and immediately stood over for Ulietea, where I intended to touch next. On the 4th we arrived in the harbour of Ohamaneno, and were visited by Oreo, the chief of the island, with whom I interchanged civilities and presents. On the 6th, we set up the observatories, and got the necessary instruments on shore.

Though we had separated from Omai, we were still near enough to have intelligence of his proceedings; and I had desired to hear from him. Accordingly, about a fortnight after our arrival at Ulietea, he sent two of his people in a canoe; who brought me the satisfactory intelligence, that he remained undisturbed by the people of the island, and that every thing went well with him, except that his goat had died in kidding. He accompanied this intelligence with a request, that I would send him another goat, and two axes. Being happy to have this additional opportunity of serving

him, the messengers were sent to back to Huaheine, on the 18th, with the axes, and two kids, male and female, which were spared for him out of the Discovery.

On the 24th, I was informed that a midshipman and a seaman, both belonging to the Discovery, were missing. As the midshipman was known to have expressed a desire to remain at these islands, it seemed pretty certain that he and his companion had gone off with this intention; and Captain Clerke set out in quest of them, with two armed boats, and a party of marines. His expedition proved fruitless, for he returned in the evening without having got any certain intelligence where they were. From the conduct of the natives, Captain Clerke seemed to think that they intended to conceal the deserters; and with that view, had amused him with false information the whole day, and directed him to search for them in places where they were not to be found. The captain judged right; for, the next morning, we were told that our runaways were at Otaha. As these two were not the only persons in the ships who wished to end their days at these favourite islands, in order to put a stop to any further desertion, it was necessary to get them back at all events; and that the natives might be convinced that I was in earnest, I resolved to go after them myself.

Accordingly, I set out the next morning, with two armed boats, being accompanied by the chief himself. I proceeded, as he directed, without stopping any where, till we came to the middle of the east side of Otaha. But when we got to the place where we expected to find them, we were told, that they had quitted this island, and gone over to Bolabola the day before. I did not think proper to follow them thither; but returned to the ships; fully determined, however, to have recourse to a measure, which, I guessed, would oblige the natives to bring them back.

Soon after day-break, the chief, his son, daughter, and son-in-law, came on board the Resolution. The three last I resolved to detain, till the two deserters

should be brought back. With this view, Captain Clerke invited them to go on board his ship; and as soon as they arrived there, confined them in his cabin. The chief was with me when the news reached him. He immediately acquainted me with it, supposing that this step had been taken without my knowledge, and consequently without my approbation. I instantly undeceived him; and then he began to have apprehensions as to his own situation, and his looks expressed the utmost perturbation of mind. But I soon made him easy as to this, by telling him that he was at liberty to leave the ship whenever he pleased, and to take such measures as he should judge best calculated to get our two men back; that if he succeeded, his friends on board the *Discovery* should be delivered up; if not, that I was determined to carry them away with me.

Oreo himself did not give way to unavailing lamentations, but instantly began his exertions to recover our deserters, by dispatching a canoe to Bolabola, with a message to Opoony, the sovereign of that island, acquainting him with what had happened, and requesting him to seize the two fugitives, and send them back. The messenger, who was no less a man than the father of Pooroe, Oreo's son-in-law, before he set out, came to receive my commands.

The consequence, however, of the prisoners, was so great, that the natives did not think proper to trust to the return of our people for their release; or, at least, their impatience was so great, that it hurried them to meditate an attempt which might have involved them in still greater distress, had it not been fortunately prevented. Between five and six o'clock in the evening, I observed that all their canoes, in and about the harbour, began to move off, as if some sudden panic had seized them. I was on shore abreast of the ship, at the time, and enquired in vain, to find out the cause, till our people called to us from the *Discovery*, and told us that a party of the natives had seized Captain Clerke and Mr. Gore, who had walked out a little way from the ships. Struck with the boldness of this

plan of retaliation, which seemed to counteract me so effectually in my own way, there was no time to deliberate. I instantly ordered the people to arm; and, in less than five minutes, a strong party, under the command of Mr. King, was sent to rescue our two gentlemen. At the same time, two armed boats, and a party under Mr. Williamson, went after the flying canoes, to cut off their retreat to the shore. These several detachments were hardly out of sight, before an account arrived that we had been misinformed; upon which I sent and called them all in.

It was evident, however, from several corroborating circumstances, that the design of seizing Captain Clerke had really been in agitation amongst the natives. Nay, they made no secret in speaking of it the next day. But their first and great plan of operations, was to have laid hold of me. It was my custom every evening, to bathe in the fresh water. Very often I went alone; and always without arms. Expecting me to go, as usual, this evening, they had determined to seize me, and Captain Clerke, too, if he had accompanied me. But I had, after confining Oreo's family, thought it prudent to avoid putting myself in their power: and had cautioned Captain Clerke, and the officers, not to go far from the ships. In the course of the afternoon, the chief asked me three several times, if I would not go the bathing place; and when he found, at last, that I could not be prevailed upon, he went off, with the rest of his people, in spite of all that I could do or say to stop him. But as I had no suspicion, at this time, of their design, I imagined that some sudden fright had seized them, which would as usual, soon be over. Finding themselves disappointed as to me, they fixed on those who were more in their power. It was fortunate, for all parties, that they did not succeed; and not less fortunate, that no mischief was done on the occasion. For not a musket was fired, except two or three, to stop the canoes. To that firing, perhaps, Messrs. Clerke and Gore owed their safety; for, at that very instant, a party of the natives, armed with clubs, were

advancing toward them ; and, on hearing the report of the muskets, they dispersed.

Oreo, the chief, being uneasy, as well as myself, that no account had been received from Bolabola, set out the evening of the 28th, for that island, and desired me to follow down the next day with the ships. This was my intention ; but the wind would not admit of our getting to sea. But the same wind, which kept us in the harbour, brought Oreo back from Bolabola with the two deserters. They had reached Otaha the same night they deserted ; but, finding it impossible to get to any of the islands to the eastward, for want of wind, they had proceeded to Bolabola, and from thence to the small island Toobaee, where they were taken. As soon as they were on board, the three prisoners were released. Thus ended an affair which had given me much trouble and vexation. Nor would I have exerted myself so resolutely on the occasion, but for the reason before-mentioned, and to save the son of a brother officer from being lost to his country.

The wind continuing contrary, confined us in the harbour till the morning of the 7th of December ; when we took the advantage of a light breeze at north-east, and, with the assistance of all the boats, got out to sea. As soon as we had got clear of the harbour, we took our leave of Ulietea, and steered for Bolabola. Oreo, and six or eight men more, took a passage with us. My sole object in visiting this island was, to get possession of an anchor which M. Bougainville had lost at Otahite ; it was taken up there, and sent to the chief of this place as a present. I wanted it to fabricate hatchets, and other iron tools, which we had almost expended in exchange for refreshments, and we now wanted to create a new stock of trading articles.

We landed where the natives directed us ; and soon after, I was introduced to Opoony, the chief, in the midst of a great concourse of people. Having no time to lose, as soon as the necessary formality of compliments was over, I asked the chief to give me the anchor, and produced the present I had prepared for him, consisting

the report of

as myself,
labola, set
d, and de-
the ships.

not admit of
which kept us
labola with

Otahe the
possible to

for want of
from thence
were taken.

ee prisoners
had given
I have ex-

but for the
on of a bro-

d us in the
nber; when
north-east,

ot out to sea.
our, we took
bola. Oreo,

with us. My
et possession
lost at Ota-

the chief of
ate hatchets,
expended in

wanted to

s; and soon
chief, in the
ving no time

compliments
anchor, and
m, consisting

of a linen night-gown, a shirt, some gauze handkerchiefs, a looking-glass, some beads, and other toys; and six axes. Upon the receipt of these presents, he ordered it to be delivered. Having thus completed my negotiation, I returned on board, hoisted in the boats, and made sail from the island to the north.

Personal endowments being in great esteem amongst the Otaheiteans, they have recourse to several methods of improving them, according to their notions of beauty. This is done by remaining a month or two in the house; during which time they wear a great quantity of clothes, and eat nothing but bread-fruit, to which they ascribe a remarkable property in whitening them. Their common diet is made up of, at least, nine-tenths of vegetable food; and it is, perhaps, owing to this temperate course of life that they have so few diseases among them. They only reckon five or six, which might be called chronic, or national disorders. Their behaviour, on all occasions, seems to indicate a great openness and generosity of disposition. I never saw them, in any misfortune, labour under the appearance of anxiety, after the critical moment was past. Neither does care ever seem to wrinkle their brow. On the contrary, even the approach of death does not appear to alter their usual vivacity. They express their notions of death very emphatically, by saying, that "the soul goes into darkness;" or rather into night. Their language is so copious, that for the bread-fruit alone, in its different states, they have above twenty names; as many for the taro root; and about ten for the cocoa-nut.

The times of eating, at Otaheite, are very frequent. Their first meal is about two o'clock in the morning, after which they go to sleep; and the next is at eight. At eleven they dine; and again, at two, and at five; and sup at eight. The women have not only the mortification of being obliged to eat by themselves, and in a different part of the house from the men, but, by a strange kind of policy, are excluded from a share of most of the better sorts of food. The women, generally, serve up their own victuals; for they would cer-

tainly starve, before any grown man would do them such an office. When we enquired into the reasons of it, we could get no other answer, but that it is right and necessary that it should be so.

They believe the soul to be both immaterial and immortal. They say that it keeps fluttering about the lips during the pangs of death; and that then it ascends, and mixes with, or, as they express it, is eaten by the deity. In this state it remains for some time; after which it departs to a certain place, destined for the reception of the souls of men, where it exists in eternal night. They have no idea of any permanent punishment after death; for the souls of good and of bad men are eaten indiscriminately by God. According to their doctrine, if a man refrain from all connection with women some months before death, he passes immediately into his eternal mansion. Some of their notions about the deity are extravagantly absurd. They believe that he is subject to the power of those very spirits to whom he has given existence; and that, in their turn, they frequently eat or devour him, though he possesses the power of re-creating himself. When the moon is in its wane, it is said, that they are then devouring their Eatooa; and that as it increases, he is renewing himself. They have traditions concerning the creation, which, as might be expected, are complex, and clouded with obscurity. They say that a goddess, having a lump or mass of earth suspended in a cord, gave it a swing, and scattered about pieces of land, thus constituting Otaheite, and the neighbouring islands, which were all peopled by a man and woman originally fixed at Otaheite. The spots observed in the moon, are supposed to be groves of a sort of trees which once grew in Otaheite, and being destroyed by some accident, their seeds were carried up thither by doves, where they now flourish.

Monday, December the 8th, after leaving Bolabola, I steered to the northward, with the wind generally eastward, till after we had crossed the line, and had got into the north latitudes. Seventeen months had

now elapsed since our departure from England. With regard to the principal object of my instructions, our voyage was, at this time, only beginning; and, therefore, my attention to every circumstance that might contribute toward our safety and success, was now to be called forth anew. As soon as I had got beyond the extent of my former discoveries, I ordered a survey to be taken of all the stores that were in the ships, that I might know how to use them to the greatest advantage.

On the 24th, after passing the line, land was discovered. Upon a nearer approach, it was found to be one of those low islands so common in this ocean; this is, a narrow bank of land inclosing the sea within. A few cocoa-nut trees were seen in two or three places; but, in general, the land had a very barren appearance. At day-break, the next morning, I sent two boats to search more accurately for a landing-place; and, at the same time, two others, to fish at a grappling near the shore. These last returned about eight o'clock, with upwards of two hundred weight of fish. Encouraged by this success, they were dispatched again after breakfast.

On the 26th and the following day, we caught a considerable number of turtles. On the 28th, I landed, in company with Mr. Bayly, on the island which lies between the two channels, to prepare the telescopes for observing an approaching eclipse of the sun; which was one great inducement to my anchoring here. On the morning of the 30th, the day when the eclipse was to happen, Mr. King, Mr. Bayly, and myself, went on shore, to attend the observation, in which we had tolerable success. In the afternoon, the boats and turtling party all returned on board, except a seaman belonging to the *Discovery*, who had been missing two days. There were two of them at first who had lost their way; but disagreeing about the most probable track to bring them back to their companions, they had separated; and one of them joined the party, after having been absent twenty-four hours, and been in great

distress. As soon as Captain Clerke knew that one of the stragglers was still in this awkward situation, he sent a party in search of him, who returned with their lost companion. This poor fellow must have suffered far greater distress than the other straggler; not only as having been lost a longer time, but as we found that he was too squeamish to drink turtle's blood, which the other did, as there was no water in the island.

Having some cocoa-nuts and yams on board, in a state of vegetation, I ordered them to be planted here. We got at this island, for both ships, about three hundred turtle, weighing, one with another, about ninety or a hundred pounds. They were all of the green kind, and, perhaps, as good as any in the world. We also caught, with hook and line, as much fish as we could consume during our stay. They consisted principally of cavallies, of different sizes; large and small snappers; and a few of two sorts of rock-fish. As we kept our Christmas here, I called this discovery *Christmas Island*.

On the 2d of January, 1778, at day-break, we weighed anchor, and resumed our course to the north. We discovered no land till day-break in the morning of the 18th, when an island made its appearance; and soon after, we saw more land, entirely detached from the former. On the 19th, at sun-rise, the island first seen bore east, several leagues distant. This being directly to windward, which prevented our getting near it, I stood for the other; and, not long after, discovered a third island in the direction of west-north-west, as far distant as land could be seen. Soon after we saw some canoes coming off from the shore toward the ships. I immediately brought to, to give them time to join us. They had from three to six men each; and, on their approach, we were agreeably surprised to find that they spoke the language of Otaheite, and of the other islands we had lately visited. It required but very little address to get them to come along-side; but no entreaties could prevail upon any of them to come on board. I tied some brass medals to a rope, and gave them to those

in one of the canoes, who, in return, tied some small mackerel to the rope, as an equivalent. This was repeated; and some small nails, or bits of iron, which they valued more than any other article, were given them.

Seeing no signs of an anchoring-place at this eastern extreme of the island, I ranged along the south-east side, at the distance of half a league from the shore. As soon as we made sail, the canoes left us; but others came off, as we proceeded along the coast, bringing with them roasting pigs, and some very fine potatoes, which they exchanged, as the others had done, for whatever was offered to them. Several small pigs were purchased for a six-penny nail; so that we again found ourselves in a land of plenty. The next morning we stood in for land, and were met by several canoes filled with people, some of whom took courage, and ventured on board.

At nine o'clock, being pretty near the shore, I sent three armed boats, under the command of Lieutenant Williamson, to look for a landing-place, and for fresh water. I ordered him, if he should find it necessary to land in search of the latter, not to suffer more than one man to go with him out of the boats. While they were occupied in examining the coast, we stood on and off with the ships, waiting for their return. About noon, Mr. Williamson came back, and reported that he had seen a large pond near one of the villages, which contained fresh water. He also reported that he had attempted to land in another place, but was prevented by the natives, who, coming down to the boats in great numbers, attempted to take away the oars, musquets, and in short, every thing that they could lay hold of; and pressed so thick upon him, that he was obliged to fire, by which one man was killed. But this unhappy circumstance I did not know till after we had left the island; so that all my measures were directed as if nothing of the kind had happened.

Between three and four o'clock I went on shore with three armed boats, to examine the water, and to try

the disposition of the inhabitants, several hundreds of whom were assembled on the beach. The very instant I leaped on shore, the collected body of the natives all fell flat upon their faces, and remained in that very humble posture, till, by expressive signs, I prevailed upon them to rise. They then brought a great many small pigs, which they presented to me, with plantain trees, using much the same ceremonies that we had seen practised, on such occasions, at the Society, and other Islands; and a long prayer being spoken by a single person, in which others of the assembly sometimes joined, I expressed my acceptance of their proffered friendship, by giving them in return, such presents as I had brought with me from the ship, for that purpose. When this introductory business was finished, I stationed a guard upon the beach, and got some of the natives to conduct me to the water, which proved to be very good, and in a proper situation for our purpose. Having satisfied myself about this very essential point, and about the peaceable disposition of the natives, I returned on board; and then gave orders that every thing should be in readiness for landing and filling our water-casks in the morning, when I again went on shore. As soon as we landed, a trade was set on foot for hogs and potatoes, which the people of the island gave us in exchange for nails and pieces of iron, formed into something like chissels. We met with no obstruction in watering; on the contrary, the natives assisted our men in rolling the casks to and from the pool, and readily performed whatever we required.

Amongst the articles which they brought to barter this day, we could not help taking notice of a particular sort of cloak and cap. The first are nearly of the size and shape of the short cloaks worn by the women in England. The ground of them is a net-work, upon which the most beautiful red and yellow feathers are so closely fixed, that the surface might be compared to the thickest and richest velvet, which they resemble, both as to the feel, and the glossy appearance.

The cap is made almost exactly like a helmet, with the middle part, or crest, sometimes of a hand's breadth; and it sits very close upon the head, having notches to admit the ear. It is a frame of twigs and osiers, covered with a net-work, into which are wrought feathers, in the same manner as upon the cloaks, though rather closer, and less diversified. These, probably, complete the dress, with the cloaks; for the natives sometimes appeared in both together. We were at a loss to guess whence they could get such a quantity of these beautiful feathers, but were soon informed; for they afterwards brought great numbers of skins of small red birds for sale.

Next day one of our visitors, who offered some fish-hooks for sale, was observed to have a very small parcel tied to the string of one of them, which he separated with great care, and reserved for himself, when he parted with the hook. Being asked what it was, he pointed to his belly. It struck us that it might be human flesh. The question being put to him, he answered, that the flesh was part of a man. Another of his countrymen, who stood by him, was then asked, whether it was their custom to eat those killed in battle; and he immediately answered in the affirmative.

After leaving Atooi, as this island was named, we proceeded to Oneeheow, on the coast of which we anchored. Six or seven canoes had come off to us, before we anchored, bringing some small pigs and potatoes, and a good many yams and mats. The people in them resembled those of Atooi; and seemed to be equally well acquainted with the use of iron, which they asked for also by the names of *hamite* and *toe*; parting readily with all their commodities for pieces of this precious metal.

On the 20th, I sent Mr. Gore on shore, with a guard of marines, and a party to trade with the natives for refreshments. The weather soon became very unpropitious; and the sea ran so high that we had no manner of communication with our party on shore; and even the natives themselves durst not venture out to the ships

in their canoes. In the evening of next day, I sent the master in a boat up to the south-east head, or point of the island, to try if he could land under it. He returned with a favorable report; but it was too late now to send for our party till the next morning; and thus they had another night to improve their intercourse with the natives.

Encouraged by the master's report, I went myself with the pinnace, and launch, up to the point, to bring the party on board; taking with me a ram-goat and two ewes, a boar and sow pig, of the English breed; and the seeds of melons, pumpkins, and onions; being very desirous of benefiting these poor people, by furnishing them with some additional articles of food. I found my party already there, with some of the natives in company. To one of them, whom Mr. Gore had observed assuming some command, I gave the goats, pigs, and seeds.

On Monday, the 2d of February, we stood away to the northward, in prosecution of our voyage. Our ship procured, from these islands, provisions sufficient for three weeks, at least; and Captain Clerke, more fortunate, obtained, of their vegetable productions, a supply, that lasted his people upwards of two months.

On the 2d of February, we steered away to the northward, and without meeting with any thing memorable, on the 7th of March, the long-looked-for coast of New Albion was seen, extending from north east to south-east, distant ten or twelve leagues. The land appeared to be of a moderate height, diversified with hills and valleys, and almost every where covered with wood. After coasting along, and combating contrary winds, on the 20th we anchored in eighty-five fathoms water, so near the shore as to reach it with a hawser..

We no sooner drew near the inlet, than we found the coast to be inhabited; and three canoes came off to the ship. In one of these were two men, in another six, and in the third ten. Having come pretty near us, a person in one of the two last stood up, and made a long harangue, inviting us to land, as we gathered by his

gestures. At the same time he kept strewing handfuls of feathers towards us; and some of his companions threw handfuls of red dust, or powder, in the same manner. The person who performed the office of orator, wore the skin of some animal; and held, in each hand, something which rattled as he kept shaking it. After trying himself with his repeated exhortations, of which we did not understand a word, he was quiet. After the tumultuous oration had ceased, one of them sung a very agreeable air, with a degree of softness and melody which we could not have expected. In a short time, the canoes began to come off in great numbers; and we had, at one time, thirty-two of them near the ship, carrying from three, to seven or eight persons each, both men and women. Several of these stood up in their canoes, haranguing, and making gestures after the manner of our first visitors. One canoe was remarkable for a singular head, which had a bird's eye and bill, of an enormous size, painted on it; and a person who was in it, who seemed to be a chief, was no less remarkable for his uncommon appearance; having many feathers hanging from his head, and being painted in an extraordinary manner. He held in his hands a carved bird of wood, as large as a pigeon, with which he rattled, as the person first mentioned had done; and was no less vociferous in his harangue, which was attended with some expressive gestures.

Though our visitors behaved very peaceably, and could not be suspected of any hostile intention, we could not prevail upon any of them to come on board. They shewed great readiness, however, to part with any thing they had, and took from us whatever we offered them in exchange; but were more desirous of iron than of any other of our articles of commerce, appearing to be perfectly acquainted with the use of that metal. Many of the canoes followed us to our anchoring-place; and a group of about ten or a dozen of them remained alongside the Resolution most part of the night. These circumstances gave us a reasonable ground of hope, that we would find this a comfortable station to supply all our

wants, and to make us forget the hardships and delays experienced during a constant succession of adverse winds and boisterous weather, almost continual since our arrival upon the coast of America.

Next morning, I lost no time in endeavouring to find a commodious harbour where we might station ourselves during our continuance. I had very little trouble in finding what we wanted. On the north-west of the arm we were now in, and not far from the ships, I met with a convenient, snug cove, well suited for our purpose.

A great many canoes, filled with the natives, were about the ships all day; and a trade commenced betwixt us and them, which was carried on with the strictest honesty on both sides. The articles which they offered for sale, were skins of various animals, such as bears, wolves, foxes, deer, racoons, polecats, martins; and in particular, the sea otters, which are found at the islands east of Kamtschatka. Besides the skins in their native shape, they also brought garments made of them, and another sort of clothing made of the bark of a tree, or some plant like hemp; weapons, such as bows, arrows, and spears; fish-hooks, and instruments of various kinds; wooden vizors of many different monstrous figures; a sort of woollen stuff, blanketing, bags filled with red ochre, pieces of carved work, beads, and several other little ornaments of thin brass and iron, shaped like a horseshoe, which they hang at their noses; and several chissels, or pieces of iron, fixed to handles. From their possessing which metals, we could infer that they had either been visited by some civilized nation, or had connections with tribes on their continent, who had communication with them. But the most extraordinary of all the articles which they brought to the ships for sale, were human skulls, and hands not yet quite stripped of the flesh, which they made our people plainly understand they had eaten; and indeed, some of them had evident marks that they had been upon the fire. We had but too much reason to suspect, from this circumstance, that the horrid practice of feeding on their enemies was prevalent here. For the various arti-

cles which they brought, they took in exchange knives, chissels, pieces of iron and tin, nails, looking-glasses, buttons, or any kind of metal. Glass beads they were not fond of; and cloth of every sort they rejected.

If they had any distrust or fear of us at first, they now appeared to have laid it aside; for they came on board the ships, and mixed with our people with the greatest freedom. We soon discovered that they were as light-fingered as any of our friends in the islands we had visited in the course of the voyage. And they were far more dangerous thieves; for, possessing sharp iron instruments, they could cut a hook from a tackle, or any other piece of iron from a rope, the instant that our backs were turned. If we missed a thing immediately after it had been stolen, we found little difficulty in detecting the thief, as they were ready enough to impeach one another. But the guilty person generally relinquished his prize with reluctance; and sometimes we found it necessary to have recourse to force.

A considerable number of the natives visited us daily; and, every now and then, we saw new faces. On their first coming, they generally went through a singular mode of introducing themselves. They would paddle, with all their strength, quite round both ships, a chief, or other principal person in the canoe, standing up with a spear, or some other weapon, in his hand, and speaking, or rather hallooing, all the time. Sometimes the orator of the canoe would have his face covered with a mask, representing either a human visage, or that of some animal; and, instead of a weapon, would hold a rattle in his hand, as before described. After making this circuit round the ships, they would come along-side, and begin to trade without farther ceremony.

During these visits, they gave us no other trouble, than to guard against their thievish tricks. But, in the morning, of the 4th of April, we had a serious alarm. Our party on shore, who were employed in cutting wood, and filling water, observed that the natives all around them were arming themselves in the best manner

they could; preparing sticks, and collecting stones. On hearing this, I thought it prudent to arm also. However, our fears were ill grounded; these hostile preparations were not directed against us, but against a body of their own countrymen, who were coming to fight them; and our friends of the sound, on observing our apprehensions, used their best endeavours to convince us that this was the case. At length, the difference, whatever it was, seemed to be compromised; but the strangers were not allowed to come along-side the ships, nor to have any trade or intercourse with us: probably we were the cause of the quarrel.

We resumed our work in the afternoon, and continued the repairs of the vessels without interruption; and other necessary business. Bad weather now came on; but that did not, however, hinder the natives from visiting us daily. They frequently brought us a tolerable supply of fish, either sardines, or what resembled them much, a small kind of bream; and sometimes small cod.

On the 18th, a party of strangers, in six or eight canoes, came into the cove, where they remained looking at us for some time, and then retired, without coming along-side either ship. We supposed that our old friends, who were more numerous about us than these new visitors, would not permit them to have any intercourse with us. We also found that many of the principal natives, who lived near us, carried on a trade with more distant tribes, in the articles they had procured from us. For we observed that they would frequently disappear for four or five days at a time, and then return, with fresh cargoes of skins and curiosities, which our people were so passionately fond of, that they always came to a good market. Nothing would go down with our visitors but metals; and brass had by this time supplanted iron, being so eagerly sought after, that, before we left this place, hardly a bit of it was left in the ships, except what belonged to our necessary instruments. Whole suits of clothes were stripped of every button; bureaus of their furniture; and copper kettles, tin cannisters, candle-sticks, and the like, all went to wreck.

After a fortnight's bad weather, the 19th proving a fair day, we availed ourselves of it, to get up the topmasts and yards, and to fix up the rigging. And, having now finished most of our heavy work, I set out next morning to take a view of the sound. I first went to the west point, where I found a large village. The people received me very courteously. In most of the houses were women at work, making dresses of the plant or bark before mentioned, which they executed exactly in the same manner that the New Zealanders manufacture their cloth. Others were occupied in opening and curing fish.

I now found, by traversing a few miles west of this village, what I had before conjectured, that the land, under which the ships lay, was an island; and that there were many smaller ones lying scattered in the sound, on the west of it. Opposite the north end of our island, upon the main land, I observed a village, and there I landed. The inhabitants of it were not so polite as those of the other. But this cold reception seemed owing to one surly chief, who would not let me enter their houses, following me wherever I went; and several times, by expressive signs, marking his impatience that I should be gone. Some of the young women, better pleased with us than was their inhospitable chief, dressed themselves expeditiously in their best apparel, and welcomed us, by joining in a song, which was far from disagreeable.

The day being now far spent, I proceeded for the ships. When I got on board, I was informed that while I was absent, they had been visited by some strangers, who, by signs made our people understand, that they had come from the south-east, beyond the Bay. They brought several skins, garments, and other articles, which they bartered. But what was most singular, two silver table spoons were purchased from them, which, from their peculiar shape, we supposed to be of Spanish manufacture. One of these strangers wore them round his neck, by way of ornament.

Captain Clerke and I went in the forenoon of next day, with two boats, to the village at the west point of the sound. When I was there the day before, I had observed that plenty of grass grew near it; and it was necessary to lay in a quantity of this, for the few goats and sheep which were still left on board. The inhabitants received us with the same demonstrations of friendship which I had experienced before; and the moment we landed, I ordered some of my people to begin their operation of cutting. I had not the least imagination that the natives could make any objection to our furnishing ourselves with what seemed to be of no use to them, but was necessary for us. However, I was mistaken; for the moment that our men began to cut, some of the inhabitants interposed, and would not permit them to proceed, saying they must *mukook*; that is, must first buy it. I bargained with them for it, and thought that we were now at liberty to cut wherever we pleased. But here again I was under a mistake; for the liberal manner in which I had paid the first pretended proprietors, brought fresh demands upon me from others; and so many of them were to be satisfied, that I very soon emptied my pockets. When they found that I really had nothing more to give, their importunities ceased, and we were permitted to cut wherever we pleased, and as much as we chose to carry away.

Every thing being now ready, in the morning of the 26th, I intended to have put to sea; but both wind and tide being against us, was obliged to continue where we were. At four o'clock in the afternoon, we had every forerunner of an approaching storm: this made me hesitate a little, whether I should venture to sail, or wait till the next morning. But my anxious impatience to proceed upon the voyage, made me determine to put to sea at all events. Our friends, the natives, attended us, till we were almost out of the sound; some on board the ships, and others in their canoes. To one of their chiefs, who had attached himself to me, I presented a new broad-sword, with a brass hilt; the possession of

which made him completely happy. I make no doubt that whoever comes after me to this place, will find the natives prepared with no inconsiderable supply of skins; an article of trade which they could observe, we were eager to possess, and which we found could be purchased to great advantage.

On my arrival in this inlet, I had honoured it with the name of *King George's Sound*; but I afterwards found, that it is called Nootka by the natives. The harbours and anchoring-places, within its circuit, are numerous. The land bordering upon the sea-coast is of a middling height and level; but within the sound it rises almost every where into steep hills, which agree in their general formation, ending in round or blunted tops, with some sharp, though not very prominent, ridges on their sides. Some of these hills may be reckoned high.

On quitting the sound, I bore away, steering north-west; in which direction I supposed the coast to lie. At half past one in the afternoon, it blew a perfect hurricane, so that I judged it highly dangerous to run any longer before it, and therefore brought the ships to. At this time the *Resolution* sprunk a leak. It was no sooner discovered, than the fish-room was found to be full of water, and the casks in it afloat; but this was in a great measure owing to the water not finding its way to the pumps through the coals that lay at the bottom of the room. For after the water was bailed out, which employed us till midnight, and had found its way directly from the leak to the pumps, it appeared that one pump kept it under, which gave us no small satisfaction.

At seven in the evening, on the 1st of May, we got sight of land, which abounds with hills, but one considerably out-tops the rest; this I called *Mount Edgecumbe*. It was wholly covered with snow; as were also all the other elevated hills; but the lower ones, and the flatter spots, bordering upon the sea, were free from it, and covered with wood. On the 3rd, we saw a large inlet, distant six leagues; and the

most advanced point of the land, lying under a very high peaked mountain, which obtained the name of *Mount Fair Weather*. The inlet was named *Cross Sound*, as being first on that day so marked in our calender. On the 10th, we found ourselves no more than three leagues from the coast of the continent, which extended as far as the eye could reach. To the westward of this last direction was an island, that extended from north to south, distant six leagues. A point shoots out from the main toward the north-east end of the island, about five or six leagues distant. This point I named *Cape Suckling*.

On the 11th, I bore up for the island. At ten o'clock in the morning I went in a boat, and landed upon it, with a view of seeing what lay on the other side; but finding it farther to the hills than I expected, and the way being steep and woody, I was obliged to drop the design. At the foot of a tree, on a little eminence not far from the shore, I left a bottle with a paper in it, on which were inscribed the names of the ships, and the date of our discovery. And along with it I inclosed two silver twopenny pieces of his majesty's coin, of the date 1772. These, with many others, were furnished me by the Rev. Dr. Kaye, (now Dean of Lincoln,) and, as a mark of my esteem and regard for that gentleman, I named the Island after him, *Kaye's Island*. It is eleven or twelve leagues in length, but its breadth is not above a league, or a league and a half, in any part of it.

On this island there are a considerable number of pines, and the whole seems covered with a broad girdle of wood. In the passage from the ship to the shore, we saw a great many fowls sitting upon the water, or flying about in flocks or pairs; the chief of which were a few quebrantahuessos, divers, ducks, or large peterels; gulls, shags, and burres. At the place where we landed, a fox came from the verge of the wood, and eyed us with very little emotion, walking leisurely without any signs of fear. He was of a reddish-yellow colour,

g under a very
d the name of
s named *Cross*
marked in our
rselves no more
the continent,
reach. To the
island, that ex-
x leagues. A
d the north-east
leagues distant.

At ten o'clock
anded upon it,
other side; but
ected, and the
ged to drop the
e eminence not
paper in it, on
ships, and the
h it I inclosed
y's coin, of the
were furnished
(Lincoln,) and,
hat gentleman,
nd. It is ele-
breadth is not
in any part of

le number of
a broad girdle
the shore, we
ater, or flying
h were a few
rge peterels;
here we land-
od, and eyed
urely without
ellow colour,

like some of the skins we bought at Nootka, but not of a large size.

We were now threatened with a fog and a storm, and I wanted to get into some place to stop the leak, before we encountered another gale. These reasons induced me to steer for an inlet, which we had no sooner reached, than the weather became so foggy, that we could not see a mile before us, and it became necessary to secure the ships in some place, to wait for a clearer sky. With this view, I hauled close under a cape, which I now called *Cape Hinchinbroke*, and anchored before a small cove, a little within the cape, and about a quarter of a mile from the shore.

At some short intervals the fog cleared away, and gave us a sight of the lands around us. The westernmost point we had in sight on the north shore, bore north north-west half west, two leagues distant. Between this point and the shore, under which we were at anchor, is a bay about three leagues deep; on the south-east side of which there are two or three coves, such as that before in which we had anchored; and in the middle some rocky islands. To these islands Mr. Gore was sent in a boat, in hopes of shooting some eatable birds. But he hardly got to them, before about twenty natives made their appearance in two large canoes; on which he thought proper to return to the ships, and they followed him. They would not venture along side, but kept at some distance, hallooing aloud, and alternately clasping and extending their arms; and, in a short time, began a kind of song exactly after the manner of those at Nootka. Their heads were also powdered with feathers. One man held out a white garment, which we interpreted as a sign of friendship; and another stood up in the canoe, quite naked, for almost a quarter of an hour, with his arms stretched out like a cross, and motionless. Though we returned all their signs of friendship, and, by every expressive gesture, tried to encourage them to come along-side, we could not prevail.

At ten o'clock next morning we got under sail, in order to look out for some place where we might search for and stop the leak; our present station being too much exposed for this purpose. The natives, who visited us the preceding evening, came off again in the morning, in five or six canoes, but not till we were under sail; and, although they followed us for some time, they could not get up with us. At eight o'clock the violence of the squalls obliged us to anchor in a bay. The weather, bad as it was, did not hinder three of the natives from paying us a visit. The treatment these men met with, induced many more to visit us, between one and two the next morning, in both great and small canoes. A few ventured on board the ship, but not till some of our people had stepped into their boats. Amongst those, who came on board, was a good looking, middle-aged man, whom we afterwards found to be the chief. He was clothed in a dress made of the sea-otter's skin; and had on his head such a cap as is worn by the people of King George's Sound, ornamented with skyblue glass beads, about the size of a large pea. He seemed to set a much higher value upon these than upon our white glass beads. Any sort of beads, however, appeared to be in high estimation with these people; and they readily gave whatever they had in exchange for them; even their fine sea-otter skins.

These people were also desirous of iron; but they wanted pieces eight or ten inches long at least, and of the breadth of three or four fingers. The points of some of their spears or lances were of that metal; others were of copper, and a few of bone, of which the points of their darts, arrows, &c. were composed. I could not prevail upon the chief to trust himself below the upper deck; nor did he and his companions remain long on board. But while we had their company, it was necessary to watch them narrowly, as they soon betrayed a thievish disposition. At length, after being about three or four hours along-side the Resolution they all left her, and went to the Discovery, where

under sail, in
e might search
ion being too
ves, who visit-
again in the
l we were un-
for some time,
ght o'clock the
r in a bay. The
three of the na-
nent these men
s, between one
t and small ca-
ship, but not till
o their boats.
as a good look-
rwards found to
ess made of the
such a cap as is
ound, ornament-
e size of a large
her value upon
s. Any sort of
estimation with
whatever they
ir fine sea-otter

iron; but they
at least, and of
The points of
of that metal
ne, of which the
re composed.
st himself below
companions remain
their company;
as they soon be-
gth, after being
the Resolution
discovery, where

after looking down the hatchways, and seeing nobody but the officer of the watch, and one or two more, he no doubt thought they might plunder her with ease, especially as she lay at some distance from us. It was unquestionably with this view that they all repaired to her. Several of them, without any ceremony, went on board, drew their knives, made signs to the officer and people on deck to keep off, and began to look about them for plunder. The first thing they met with was the rudder of one of the boats, which they threw over-board to those of their party who had remained in their canoes. Before they had time to find another object that pleased their fancy, the crew were alarmed, and began to come on deck, armed with cutlasses. On seeing this, the whole company of plunderers sneaked off in their canoes, with as much deliberation and indifference as if they had done nothing amiss; and they were observed describing to those who had not been on board, how much longer the knives of the ship's crew were than their own.

Just as we were going to weigh the anchor, to proceed farther up the bay, it began to blow and to rain as hard as before; so that we were obliged to veer away the cable again, and lay fast. Toward the evening, finding that the gale did not moderate, and that it might be some time before an opportunity offered to get higher up, I came to a resolution to heel the ship where we were. In heaving the anchor out of the boat, one of the seamen, either through ignorance or carelessness, or both, was carried over-board by the buoy-rope, and followed the anchor to the bottom. It is remarkable, that in this very critical situation, he had presence of mind to disengage himself, and come up to the surface of the water, where he was taken up, with one of his legs fractured in a dangerous manner.

The leak being stopped, which was found to be in the seams, at four o'clock in the morning of the 17th, we weighed and steered to the north-westward, with a light breeze at east north-east; thinking, if there should be any passage to the north through this inlet, that it

must be in that direction. We were now upwards of five hundred and twenty leagues to the westward of any part of Hudson's Bay. Next morning, at three o'clock, we weighed, and, with a gentle breeze at north, proceeded to the southward down the inlet, and met with the same broken ground as on the preceding day. However, we soon extricated ourselves from it. Next evening we were again in the open sea, and found the coast trending west by south, as far as the eye could reach. To the inlet, which we had now left, I gave the name of *Prince William's Sound*.

On May the 21st, I steered to the south-west, and passed a lofty promontory. As the discovery of it was connected with the Princess Elizabeth's birth-day, I named it *Cape Elizabeth*. Beyond it we could see no land, so that at first we were in hopes that it was the western extremity of the continent; but not long after we found our mistake, for fresh land appeared in sight, bearing west south-west. We continued our course with little variation, observing many high mountains, near the coast till the 30th, when we anchored in nineteen fathoms water under the eastern shore.

About noon two canoes, with a man in each, came off to the ship, from near a place where we had seen some smoke the preceding day. They laboured very hard in paddling across the strong tide; and hesitated a little before they would come quite close; but, upon signs being made to them, they approached. One of them talked a great deal to no purpose; for we did not understand a word he said. He kept pointing to the shore, which we interpreted to be an invitation to go thither. They accepted of a few trifles from me, which I conveyed to them from the quarter gallery.

When the flood made, we weighed, and stood over to the western shore with a fresh gale at north north-east. This, with the other on the opposite shore, contracted the channel to the breadth of four leagues. Through this channel ran a prodigious tide. As we proceeded farther up, the marks of a river displayed themselves. The water was found to be fresher; in

so much that I was convinced that we were in a large river, and not in a strait communicating with the Northern Seas. But I was desirous of having stronger proofs, and therefore weighed with the next flood, in the morning of the 31st, and plied higher up, or rather drove up with the tide; for we had but little wind.

About eight o'clock we were visited by several of the natives, in one large and several small canoes. The latter carried only one person each; and some had a paddle with a blade at each end, after the manner of the Esquimaux. Soon after, we came to an anchor, about two leagues from the west shore. The weather was misty, with drizzling rain, and clear by turns. At the clear intervals, we saw an opening between the mountains on the eastern shore, bearing east from the station of the ships, with low land, which we supposed to be islands laying between us and the main land. From these appearances, we were in some doubt whether the inlet did not take an easterly direction, through the above opening; or whether that opening was only a branch of it, and the main channel continued its northern direction through the low land now in sight. To determine this point, and to examine the shoals, I dispatched two boats, under the command of the master; and as soon as the flood-tide made, followed with the ships. We had now many evident proofs of being in a great river.

Early next morning, being the 1st of June, the master returned, and reported that he found the inlet, or rather river, contracted to the breadth of one league, by low land on each side, through which it took a northerly direction. He proceeded three leagues through this narrow part, which he found navigable for the largest ships. While the ebb or stream ran down, the water was perfectly fresh; but, after the flood made, it became brackish; and towards high-water, very much so, even as high up as we went.

All hopes of finding a passage were now given up. However, I dispatched two boats, under the command of Lieutenant King, to examine the tides, and to make

such other observations as might give us some insight into the nature of the river, which I shall distinguish by the name of *River Turnagain*. By means of this river, and its several branches, a very extensive inland communication seems to lie open. We had traced it seventy leagues, or more, from its entrance, without seeing the least appearance of its source.

In the afternoon I sent Mr. King again, with two armed boats, with orders to land on the northern point of the low land, on the south-east side of the river, there to display the flag; to take possession of the country and river in his majesty's name; and to bury in the ground a bottle, containing some pieces of English coin, of the year 1772, and a paper, on which was inscribed the names of our ships, and the date of our discovery.

We weighed anchor as soon as it was high-water; and with a faint breeze, southerly, stood over to the west shore, where the return of the flood obliged us to anchor early next morning. Soon after several large and some small canoes, with natives, came off, who bartered their skins; after which they sold their garments, till many of them were quite naked.

In plying down the river, a good many of the natives came off. Their company was very acceptable; for they brought with them a large quantity of very fine salmon, which they exchanged for such trifles as we had to give them. Most of it was split ready for drying; and several hundred weight of it was procured for the two ships. In the afternoon of the 2d of June, the mountains, for the first time since our entering the river, were clear of clouds; and we discovered a volcano in one of those on the west-side. It did not make any striking appearance, emitting only a white smoke, but no fire.

The wind remaining southerly, we continued to tide it down the river. Before we left this place, six canoes came off from the east shore; some conducted by one, and others by two, men. They remained at a little distance from the ships, viewing them with a kind of

silent surprise, at least half an hour, without exchanging a single word with us, or with one another. At length they took courage, and came along-side, began to barter with our people, and did not leave us till they had parted with every thing they brought with them, consisting of a few skins and some salmon.

Most of the skins, which we purchased here, were made up into garments. However, some of these were in good condition; but others were old and ragged enough. But as these poor people make no other use of skins but for clothing themselves, it cannot be supposed that they are at the trouble of dressing more of them than are necessary for this purpose. And perhaps this is the chief use for which they kill the animals; for the sea and the rivers seem to supply them with their principal articles of food. It would probably be much otherwise, where they once habituated to a constant trade with foreigners.

Nothing interesting happened till the 18th, when, having occasion to send a boat on board the *Discovery*, one of the people in her shot a very beautiful bird of the hawk kind. It is somewhat less than a duck, and of a black colour, except the fore part of the head, which is white; and from above and behind each eye arises an elegant yellowish white crest, revolved backward as a ram's horn. The bill and feet are red. We had for some days seen these birds in large flocks.

On the 19th, being near the shore, the *Discovery* fired three guns, brought to, and made the signal to speak with us. A boat was immediately sent to her, and in a short time returned with Captain Clerke. I now learned from him, that some natives, in three or four canoes, who had followed the ship for some time, at length got under his stern. One of them then made many signs, taking off his cap and bowing, after the manner of Europeans. A rope being handed down from the ship, to this he fastened a small thin wooden case or box; and having delivered this safe, and spoken something, and made some more signs, the canoes dropped astern, and left the *Discovery*. No

one on board her had any suspicion that the box contained any thing, till after the departure of the canoes, when it was accidentally opened, and a piece of paper was found folded up carefully, upon which something was written in the Russian language, as was supposed. The date 1778 was prefixed to it; and, in the body of the written note, there was a reference to the year 1766. Not learned enough to decypher the alphabet of the writer, his numerals marked sufficiently that others had preceded us in visiting this dreary part of the globe, who were united to us by other ties besides those of our common nature; and the hopes of soon meeting with some of the Russian traders, could not but give a sensible satisfaction to those who had, for such a length of time, been conversant with the savages of the Pacific Ocean, and of the continent of North America.

Captain Clerke was at first of opinion, that some Russians had been shipwrecked here; and that these unfortunate persons, seeing our ships pass, had taken this method to inform us of their situation. Impressed with humane sentiments, on such an occasion, he was desirous of stopping till they might have time to join us. But no such idea occurred to me. I rather thought that the paper contained a note of information, left by some Russian trader, who had lately been amongst these islands, to be delivered to the next visitors. Fully convinced of this, I did not stay to enquire any farther into the matter, but made sail, and stood away to the westward.

We continued to run all night, with a gentle breeze at north-east; and, at two o'clock next morning, some breakers were seen within us, at the distance of two miles. The breakers forced us so far from the continent, that we had but a distant view of the coast. Over some adjoining islands, we could see the main land covered with snow; but particularly some hills, whose elevated tops were seen towering above the clouds, to a most stupendous height. The most south-westerly of these hills was discovered to have a volcano

which continually threw up vast columns of black smoke. It stands not far from the coast. It is also remarkable from its figure, which is a complete cone; and the volcano is at the very summit.

In the afternoon, having three hours calm, our people caught upwards of a hundred halibuts, some of which weighed a hundred pounds. This was a very seasonable refreshment to us. In the height of our fishing, a small canoe, conducted by one man, came to us from the large island. On approaching the ship, he took off his cap, and bowed. It was evident that the Russians must have communication and traffic with these people; not only from their acquired politeness, but from the note before mentioned. But we had now a fresh proof of it; for our present visiter wore a pair of green cloth breeches, and a jacket of black cloth or stuff, under the gut-shirt of his own country. He had nothing to barter, except a grey fox-skin, and some fishing implements or harpoons; the heads of the shafts of which were neatly made of bone.

On the morning of the 25th, we got a breeze easterly; and, what was uncommon with this wind, clear weather; so that we not only saw the volcano, but other mountains, both to the east and west of it, and all the coast of the main land under them, much plainer than at any time before. The weather, in the afternoon, became gloomy, and at length turned to a mist, so thick that we could not see a hundred yards before us. We were now alarmed at hearing the sound of breakers on our larboard bow. On heaving the lead, we found twenty-eight fathoms water. I immediately brought the ship to, and anchored over a bottom of coarse sand.

A few hours after, the fog having cleared a little, it appeared that we had escaped very imminent danger. We found ourselves three quarters of a mile from the north-east side of an island. Two elevated rocks were about half a league each from us, and about the same distance from each other. There were several breakers about them; and yet Providence had, in the dark,

conducted the ships through between these rocks, which I should not have ventured in a clear day, and to such an anchoring place that I could not have chosen a better.

On a point, which bore west from the ship, three quarters of a mile distant, were several natives and their habitations. To this place we saw them tow in two whales, which we supposed they had just killed. A few of them now and then came off to the ships, and bartered a few trifling things with our people; but never remained above a quarter of an hour at a time. On the contrary, they rather seemed shy; and yet we could judge that they were no strangers to vessels something like ours. They behaved with a degree of politeness uncommon to savage tribes.

At day-break on the 28th, we weighed with a light breeze at south, which was succeeded by variable light airs from all directions. But as there ran a rapid tide in our favour, we got through before the ebb made. We came to anchor in twenty-eight fathoms water, pretty near the southern shore. While we lay here, several of the natives came off to us, and bartered a few fishing implements for tobacco. One of them, a young man, overset his canoe, while along-side of one of our boats. Our people caught hold of him; but the canoe went adrift. The youth, by this accident, was obliged to come into the ship; and he went down into my cabin upon the first invitation, without expressing the least reluctance or uneasiness. His own clothes being wet, I gave him others, in which he dressed himself with as much ease as I could have done. From his behaviour, and that of some others, we were convinced that these people were no strangers to Europeans, and to some of their customs. But there was something in our ships that greatly excited their curiosity; for such as could not come off in canoes, assembled on the neighbouring hills to look at them.

Soon after we anchored, a native of the island brought on board such another note as had been given to Captain Clerke. He presented it to me; but it was writ-

ten in the Russian language, which, as already observed, none of us could read. As it could be of no use to me, and might be of consequence to others, I returned it to the bearer, and dismissed him with a few presents; for which he expressed his thanks, by making several low bows as he retired.

Thick fogs and a contrary wind detained us till the 2d of July. In the morning of the 16th, we found ourselves nearer the land than we expected. Here, between two points, the coast forms a bay, in some parts of which the land was hardly visible from the mast-head. I sent Lieutenant Williamson, with orders to land, and see what direction the coast took, and what the country produced; for, from the ships, it had but a barren appearance.

Soon after, Mr. Williamson returned, and reported, that he had landed on the point, and having climbed the highest hill, found that the farthest part of the coast in sight bore nearly north. He took possession of the country in his Majesty's name, and left on the hill a bottle, in which was inscribed, on a piece of paper, the names of the ships, and the date of the discovery. The promontory, to which he gave the name of *Cape Newenham*, is a rocky point of tolerable height. The hills are naked; but on the lower grounds grew grass and other plants. He saw no other animal but a doe and her fawn; and a dead sea-horse, or cow, upon the beach.

From the 16th to the 21st, nothing material occurred. On the 21st, we were obliged to anchor, to avoid running upon a shoal, which had only a depth of five feet. While we lay here, twenty-seven men of the country, each in a canoe, came off to the ships, which they approached with great caution; hallooing and opening their arms as they advanced. This we understood was to express their pacific intentions. At length some approached near enough to receive a few trifles that were thrown to them. This encouraged the rest to venture along-side, and a traffic presently commenced between them and our people. They resembled

the other natives of the coast; and appeared to be wholly unacquainted with people like us: they knew not the use of tobacco; nor was any foreign article seen in their possession, unless a knife may be looked upon as such. This indeed was only a piece of common iron, fitted in a wooden handle, so as to answer the purpose of a knife.

Variable winds, with rain, prevailed till the 3d of August. Mr. Anderson, my surgeon, who had been lingering under a consumption for more than twelve months, expired between three and four this afternoon. He was a sensible young man, an agreeable companion, well skilled in his own profession, and had acquired considerable knowledge in other branches of science. The reader of this journal will have observed, how useful an assistant I had found him in the course of the voyage; and, had it pleased God to have spared his life, the public, I make no doubt, might have received from him, such communications, on various parts of the natural history of the several places we visited, as would have abundantly shewn that he was not unworthy of this commendation. Soon after he had breathed his last, land was seen to the westward, twelve leagues distant. It was supposed to be an island, and, to perpetuate the memory of the deceased, for whom I had a very great regard, I named it *Anderson's Island*.

At ten in the morning of the 5th, with the wind at south-west, we ran down, and anchored, between an island and the continent, in seven fathoms water. This island, which was named *Sledge Island*, is about four leagues in circuit. I landed here, but saw neither shrub nor tree, either upon the island or on the continent. That people had lately been on the island, was evident from the marks of their feet. We found, near where we landed, a sledge, which occasioned this name being given to the island. It seemed to be such an one as the Russians in Kamtschatka make use of over the ice, or snow. It was ten feet long, twenty inches broad, and had a kind of rail-work on each side, and was shod with bone. The construction of it was admirable, and

all the parts neatly put together. After several observations from the 6th to the 9th, I was satisfied that the whole was a continued coast. I tacked, and stood away for its north-west part, and came to an anchor near a point of land, which I named *Cape Prince of Wales*. It is the western extremity of all America hitherto known.

At day-break, in the morning of the 10th, we resumed our course to the west; and about ten o'clock we anchored in a large bay, two miles from the shore. As we were standing into this bay, we perceived on the north shore, a village, and some people, whom the sight of the ships seemed to have thrown into confusion or fear. At these habitations I proposed to land, and accordingly went, with three armed boats, accompanied with some of the officers. About thirty or forty men, each armed with a spoutoon, a bow and arrows, stood drawn up on a rising ground close by the village. As we drew near, three of them came down toward the shore, and were so polite as to take off their caps, and to make us low bows. We returned the civility; but this did not inspire them with sufficient confidence to wait for our landing; for the moment we put the boats on shore, they retired. I followed them alone, and by signs and gestures, prevailed on them to stop, and receive some trifling presents. In return they gave me two fox-skins, and a couple of sea-horse teeth.

They seemed very cautious, expressing their desire, by signs, that no more of our people should be permitted to come up. A few beads distributed to those about us, soon created a kind of confidence; and, by degrees, a sort of traffic between us commenced. In exchange for knives, beads, tobacco, and other articles, they gave us some of their clothing, and a few arrows. But nothing that we had to offer, could induce them to part with a spear or a bow. These they held in constant readiness, never once quitting them, except at one time, when four or five persons laid theirs down while they gave us a song and a dance

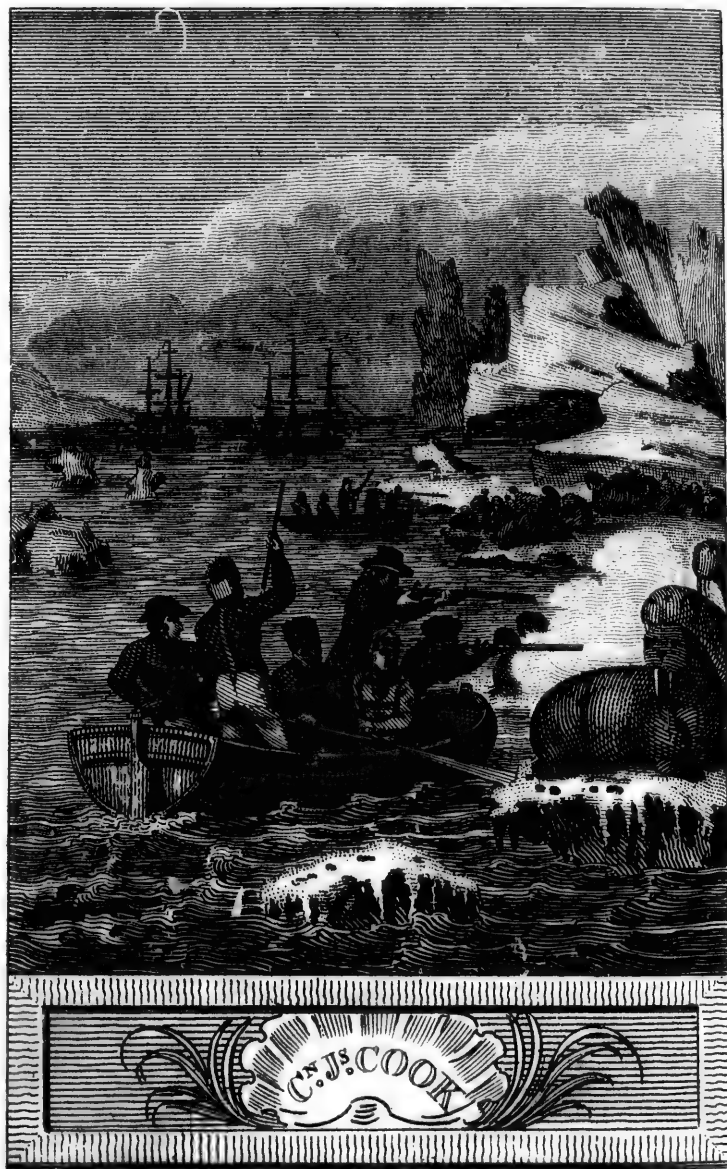
After a stay of between two and three hours with these people, we returned to our ships; and, soon after, we weighed anchor, and stood out of the bay. From this station we steered east, in order to get nearer the American coast. On Monday the 7th, before noon, we perceived a brightness in the northern horizon, like that reflected from ice, commonly called the blink. About an hour after, the sight of a large field of ice, left us no longer in doubt about the cause of the brightness of the horizon. At half past two we tacked close to the edge of the ice, in twenty-two fathoms water, not being able to stand on any farther; for the ice was quite impenetrable, and extended from west by south, to east by north, as far as the eye could reach. Here were abundance of sea-horses.

On the 18th, at noon, we were near five leagues farther to the eastward. We were, at this time, close to the edge of the ice, which was as compact as a wall; and seemed to be ten or twelve feet high at least. But farther north it appeared much higher. We now stood to the southward; and after running six leagues, shoaled the water to seven fathoms; but it soon deepened to nine fathoms. At this time we saw land extending from south to south-east by east, about three or four miles distant. The eastern extreme forms a point, which was much encumbered with ice; for which reason it obtained the name of *Icy Cape*. The other extreme of the land was lost in the horizon; so that there can be no doubt of its being a continuation of the American continent. Our situation was now more and more critical. We were in shoal water, upon a lee shore; and the main body of the ice to windward driving down upon us. I therefore made the signal for the *Discovery* to tack, and tacked myself at the same time.

Next day we had a good deal of drift ice about us; and the main ice was about two leagues to the north. It was too close, and in two large pieces, to attempt forcing the ships through it. On the ice lay a prodigious number of sea-horses: and as we were in want

hours with
and, soon
of the bay.
to get nearer
before noon,
horizon, like
the blink.
field of ice,
the bright-
acked close
oms water,
the ice was
est by south,
each. Here

five leagues
time, close
ct as a wall;
gh at least.
r. We now
six leagues,
soon deepen-
and extend-
three or four
ms a point,
which rea-
e other ex-
so that there
of the Ame-
re and more
a lee shore;
driving down
he Discovery
e,
e about us;
to the north.
, to attempt
e lay a pro-
vere in want



W.B. del.

Page 265

S. Sharp

Published by & for I.Roe 1808.

of fresh provisions, the boats from each ship were sent to get some.

Why they should be called sea-horses, is hard to say, unless the word be a corruption of the Russian name *Morse*; for they have not the least resemblance of a horse. This is, without doubt, the same animal that is found in the Gulph of St. Lawrence, and there called a sea-cow. It is certainly more like a cow than a horse; but this likeness consists in nothing but the snout. In short, it is an animal like a seal, but incomparably larger; weighing sometimes more than one thousand pounds, and measuring ten feet from the snout to the tail.

By the time that we had got our sea-horses on board, we were, in a manner, surrounded with the ice, and had no way left to clear it, but by standing to the southward; which was done till three o'clock next morning. At two in the afternoon, we fell in with the main ice; along the edge of which we kept, being partly directed by the roaring of the sea-horses; for we had a very thick fog. Thus we continued sailing till near midnight, when we got in amongst the loose ice; and heard the surge of the sea upon the main ice.

Next morning the fog clearing away, we saw the continent of America, extending from south by east, to east by south; and at noon, from south-west half south, to east: the nearest part five leagues distant. I continued to steer in for it until eight o'clock, in order to get a nearer view of it, and to look for a harbour; but seeing nothing like one, I stood again to the north. The ice obliged us to change our course frequently, till the 27th, when we tacked, and stood to the west; and at seven in the evening, we were close in with the edge of the ice, which lay east from north-east, and west south-west, as far each way as the eye could reach. Having but little wind, I went with the boats to examine the state of the ice. I found it consisting of loose pieces of various extent, and so close together, that I could hardly enter the outer edge with a boat; and it was as impossible for the ships to enter it, as if it had been so many rocks.



A thick fog, which came on while I was thus employed with the boats, hastened me on board rather sooner than I could have wished, with one sea-horse to each ship. We had killed more, but could not wait to bring them with us. The number of these animals on all the ice that we had seen, is almost incredible. By this time our people began to relish them. We now stretched to the south-east. The season was so far advanced, and the time when the frost was expected to set in, so near at hand, that I did not think it consistent with prudence to make any farther attempts to find a passage into the Atlantic this year, in any direction; so little was the prospect of succeeding. My attention was now directed towards finding out some place where we might supply ourselves with wood and water; and the object uppermost in my thoughts was, how I should spend the winter, so as to make some improvements in geography and navigation; and, at the same time, be in a condition to return to the north, in further search of a passage, the ensuing summer.

After standing off till we got into eighteen fathoms water, I bore up to the eastward along the coast of Asia. At day-break, on the 30th, we made sail, and steered such a course as I thought would bring us in with the land: for the weather was as thick as ever, and it snowed incessantly. At ten we got sight of the coast, bearing south-west, four miles distant. September 2d, we had now fair weather, and sunshine; and, as we ranged along the coast, at the distance of four miles, we saw several of the inhabitants, and some of their habitations, which looked like little hillocks of earth. None of them, however, attempted to come off to us, which seemed a little extraordinary. These people must be the Tschutski; a nation that, at the time Mr. Muller wrote, the Russians had not been able to conquer.

I now resolved to steer over for the American coast; and on the 6th we got sight of it. Pursuing our course, on the 9th, we found ourselves upon a coast covered with wood; an agreeable sight, to which, of late, we

had not been accustomed. Next morning, being about a league from the west shore, I took two boats, and landed, attended by Mr. King, to seek wood and water. Here we observed tracks of deer and foxes on the beach; on which also lay a great quantity of drift wood: and there was no want of fresh water. I returned on board, with an intention to bring the ships to an anchor here; but the wind then veering to the north-east, I stretched over to the opposite shore, in hopes of finding wood there also, and anchored at eight o'clock in the evening; but next morning we found it to be a peninsula, united to the continent by a low neck of land, on each side of which the coast forms a bay, which obtained the name of *Cape Denbigh*.

Several people were seen upon the peninsula; and one man came off in a small canoe. I gave him a knife and a few beads, with which he seemed well pleased. Having made signs to him to bring us something to eat, he immediately left us, and paddled towards the shore; but meeting another man coming off, who happened to have two dried salmon, he got them from him; and, on returning to the ship, would give them to nobody but me. Some of our people thought that he had asked for me under the name of *Capitane*; but in this they were probably mistaken.

Lieutenant Gore being now sent to the peninsula, reported that there was but little fresh water; and that wood was difficult to be got at, by reason of the boats grounding at some distance from the beach. This being the case, I stood back to the other shore; and at eight o'clock the next morning, sent all the boats, and a party of men, with an officer, to get wood from the place where I had landed two days before.

Next day, a family of the natives came near to our wooding party. I know not how many there were at first, but I saw only the husband, the wife, and their child; and a fourth person, who bore the human shape, and that was all, for he was the most deformed cripple I had ever seen, or heard of. The other man was almost blind; and neither he nor his wife were such good-

looking people, as we had seen sometimes amongst the natives of this coast. The under lips of both were bored; and they had in their possession, some such glass beads as I had met with before amongst their neighbours: but iron was their beloved article. For four knives, which we had made out of an old iron hoop, I got from them near four hundred pounds weight of fish, which they had caught on this or the preceding day. I gave the child, who was a girl, a few beads, on which the mother burst into tears, then the father, then the cripple; and, at last, to complete the concert, the girl herself: but this music continued not long. Before night, we had got the ships amply supplied with wood; and had carried on board above twelve tuns of water to each. In honor of Sir Fletcher Norton, Speaker of the House of Commons, and Mr. King's near relation, I named this inlet *Norton's Sound*.

It was now high time to think of leaving these northern regions, and to retire to some place during the winter, where I might procure refreshments for my people, and a small supply of provisions. No place was so conveniently within our reach, where we could expect to have our wants relieved, as the Sandwich Islands. To them, therefore, I determined to proceed.

On the 2d of October, at day-break, we saw the Island of Oonalashka, bearing south-east. But as this was to us a new point of view, and the land was obscured by a thick haze, we were not sure of our situation till noon, when the observed latitude determined it. But as all harbours were alike to me, provided they were equally safe and convenient, I hauled into a bay that lies ten miles to the westward of Samganoodha, known by the name of Egoochshach; but we found very deep water, so that we were glad to get out again. The natives, many of whom lived here, visited us at different times, bringing with them dried salmon, and other fish, which they exchanged with the seamen for tobacco. But a few days before, every ounce of tobacco that was in the ship had been distributed among them; and the quantity was not half sufficient to answer their

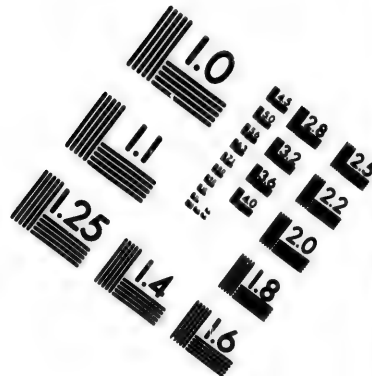
demands. Notwithstanding this, so unprovident a creature is an English sailor, that they were as profuse in making their bargains, as if we had arrived at a port in Virginia. In the afternoon of the 3d, we anchored in Samganoodha Harbour; and the next morning, the carpenters of both ships were set to work to overhaul and repair the ships.

On the 8th, I received by the hands of an Oonalashka man, named Derramoushka, a very singular present, considering the place. It was a rye loaf, or rather a pye made in the form of a loaf, for it inclosed some salmon, highly seasoned with pepper. This man had the like present for Captain Clerke, and a note for each of us, written in a character which none of us could read. It was natural to suppose that this present was from some Russians now in our neighbourhood, and therefore we sent by the same hand, to these our unknown friends, a few bottles of rum, wine, and porter. I also sent along with Derramoushka, Corporal Lediard, of the marines, an intelligent man, in order to gain some farther information, with orders that, if he met with any Russians, he should endeavour to make them understand that we were English, the friends and allies of their nation.

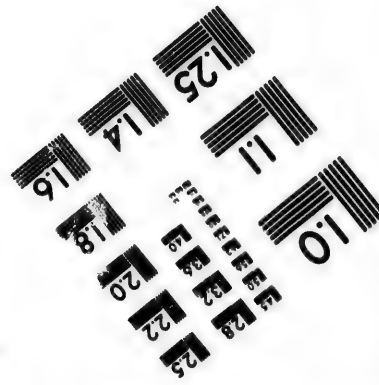
On the 10th, Lediard returned with three Russian seamen, or furriers; who with some others resided at Egoochshach, where they had a dwelling-house, some store-houses, and a sloop of about thirty tons burthen. They were all three well-behaved intelligent men, and very ready to give me all the information I could desire. But for want of an interpreter, we had some difficulty to understand each other.

On the 14th, in the evening, while Mr. Webber and I were at a village, at a small distance from Samganoodha, a Russian landed there, who I found was the principal person amongst his countrymen in this and the neighbouring islands. His name was Erasim Gregorioff Sin Ismyloff. He arrived in a canoe carrying three persons, attended by twenty or thirty other canoes, each conducted by one man. I took notice that the





6"



**23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503**

0
1
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
9
10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25

10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25

first thing they did, after landing, was to make a small tent for Ismyloff, of materials which they brought with them; and then they made others for themselves, of their canoes and paddles, which they covered with grass; so that the people of the village were at no trouble to find them lodging. Ismyloff, having invited us into his tent, set before us some dried salmon and berries; which, I was satisfied, was the best cheer he had. He appeared to be a sensible intelligent man; and I felt no small mortification in not being able to converse with him, unless by signs, assisted by figures, and other characters; which however were a very great help. I desired to see him on board the next day; and accordingly he came with all his attendants.

I found that he was very well acquainted with the geography of these parts, and with all the discoveries that had been made in them by the Russians. On seeing the modern maps, he at once pointed out their errors. From what we could gather from Ismyloff and his countrymen, the Russians have made several attempts to get a footing upon that part of the continent that lies contiguous to Oonalashka and the adjoining islands, but have always been repulsed by the natives, whom they describe as a very treacherous people. They mentioned two or three captains or chief men, who had been murdered by them; and some of the Russians shewed us wounds which they said they had received there.

In the morning of the 22d, we made an attempt to get to sea, with the wind at south-east, which miscarried. The following afternoon, we were visited by one Jacob Ivanovitch Soposnicoff, a Russian, who commanded a small vessel at Oomanak. This man had a great share of modesty and intelligence.

After we became acquainted with these Russians, some of our gentlemen, at different times, visited their settlement on the island, where they always met with a hearty welcome. This settlement consisted of a dwelling-house and two storehouses. And, besides the Russians, there was a number of the Kamtschadales, and

of the natives, as servants or slaves to the former. Some others of the natives, who seemed independent of the Russians, lived at the same place. They all dwell in the same house; the Russians at the upper end, the Kamtschadales in the middle, and the natives at the lower end, where is fixed a large boiler for preparing their food, which consists chiefly of what the sea produces, with the addition of wild roots and berries.

The natives are rather low of stature, but plump and well shaped; with rather short necks; swarthy chubby faces; black eyes; small beards; and long straight, black hair; which the men wear loose behind, and cut before, but the women tie up in a bunch. Both sexes wear the same, in fashion; the only difference is in the materials. The women's frock is made of seal-skin; and that of the men, of the skins of birds; both reaching below the knee. This is the whole dress of the women. But over the frock the men wear another, made of gut, which resists water; and has a hood to it, which draws over the head. Some of them wear boots; and all of them have a kind of oval snouted-cap, made of wood, with a rim to admit the head.

Their food consists of fish, sea animals, birds, roots, and berries; and even of sea weed. They eat almost every thing raw. Boiling and broiling were the only methods of cookery that I saw them make use of; and the first was probably learnt from the Russians. I was once present when the Chief of Oonalashka made his dinner on the raw head of a large halibut, just caught, which he swallowed with as much satisfaction as we should do raw oysters. When he had done, the remains of the head were cut in pieces, and given to the attendants, who tore off the meat with their teeth, and gnawed the bones like so many dogs.

I saw not a fire-place in any one of their houses. They are lighted, as well as heated, by lamps; which are simple, and yet answer the purpose very well. They are made of a flat stone, hollowed on one side like a plate, and about the same size, or rather larger. In the hollow part they put the oil, mixed with a little

dry grass, which serves the purpose of a wick. They produce fire both by collision and by attrition; the former by striking two stones one against another, on one of which a good deal of brimstone is first rubbed. The latter method is with two pieces of wood; one of which is a stick of about eighteen inches in length, and the other a flat piece. The pointed end of the stick they pressed upon the other, whirling it nimbly round as a drill; thus producing fire in a few minutes.

In the morning of Monday, the 26th of October, we put to sea from Samganoodeha Harbour. My intention was now to proceed to the Sandwich Islands, there to spend a few of the winter months, in case we should meet with the necessary refreshments, and then to direct our course to Kamtschatka, so as to endeavour to be there by the middle of May the ensuing summer. In consequence of this resolution, I gave Captain Clerke orders how to proceed, in case of separation; appointing the Sandwich Islands for the first place of rendezvous, and the harbour of Petropaulowska, in Kamtschatka, for the second.

Nothing remarkable happened during our course. At day-break, on the 26th of November, land was seen extending from south south-east to west. We were now satisfied that the group of the Sandwich Islands had been only imperfectly discovered; as those which we had visited in our progress northward, all lie to the leeward of our present station. I bore up, and ranged along the coast to the westward. It was not long before we saw people on several parts of the shore, and some houses and plantations. The country seemed to be both well wooded and watered.

At noon, seeing some canoes coming off to us, I brought to. We got from our visitors a quantity of cuttle-fish, for nails and pieces of iron. They brought very little fruit and roots; but told us that they had plenty of them on their island, as also hogs and fowls. Having no doubt that the people would return to the ships next day, with the produce of their country, I kept plying off all night; and in the morning stood

close in shore. At first, only a few of the natives visited us; but toward noon we had the company of a good many, who brought with them bread-fruit, potatoes, taro, or eddy roots, a few plantains, and small pigs; all of which they exchanged for nails and iron tools.

In the afternoon of the 30th, being off the north-east end of the island, several canoes came off to the ships. Most of these belonged to a chief named Terreeoboo, who came in one of them. He made me a present of two or three small pigs; and we got by barter, from the other people, a little fruit. After a stay of about two hours, they all left us, except six or eight of their company, who chose to remain on board. A double sailing canoe came soon after to attend upon them; which we towed astern all night. In the evening, we discovered another island to the windward, which the natives call Owhyhee.

On the 1st of December, at eight in the morning, finding that we could fetch Owhyhee, I stood for it; and our visitors from another island, called Mowee, not chusing to accompany us, embarked in their canoe, and went ashore. Next morning we were surprised to see the summits of the mountains of Owhyhee covered with snow. As we drew near the shore, some of the natives came off to us. They were a little shy at first; but we soon enticed some of them on board, and at last prevailed upon them to return to the island, and bring off what we wanted.

Having procured a quantity of sugar cane, and finding a strong decoction of it produced a very palatable beer, I ordered some more to be brewed for our general use. But when the cask was now broached, not one of my crew would even so much as taste it. I myself and the officers continued to make use of it, whenever we could get materials for brewing it. A few hops, of which we had some on board, improved it much. It has the taste of new malt beer; and I believe no one will doubt of its being very wholesome.

Yet my inconsiderate crew alledged that it was injurious to their health.

Every innovation whatever on board a ship, though ever so much to the advantage of seamen, is sure to meet with their highest disapprobation. Both portable soup and sour krout were at first condemned as stuff unfit for human beings. Few commanders have introduced into their ships more novelties, as useful varieties of food and drink, than I have done. It has, however, been in a great measure owing to various little deviations from established practice, that I have been able to preserve my people, generally speaking, from that dreadful distemper, the scurvy, which has, perhaps, destroyed more of our sailors in their peaceful voyages, than have fallen by the enemy in military expeditions.

I kept at some distance from the coast till the 13th, when I stood in again; and, after having had some trade with the natives, who visited us, returned to sea. At day-break, a dreadful surf breaking upon the shore, which was not more than half a league distant, it was evident that we had been in the most imminent danger. Nor were we yet in safety, the wind veering more easterly, so that for some time we did but just keep our distance from the coast.

In the afternoon of the 20th, some of the natives came off in their canoes, bringing with them a few pigs and plantains. We continued trading with the people till four in the afternoon; when, having got a pretty good supply, we made sail, and stretched off to the northward. I had never met with a behaviour so free from reserve and suspicion, in my intercourse with any tribes of savages, as we experienced in the people of this island. It was very common for them to send up into the ship the several articles they brought off for barter; afterward, they would come in themselves, and make their bargains on the quarter-deck. The people of Otaheite, even after our repeated visits, did not care to put so much confidence in us.

On the 23d, we tacked to the southward, and had hopes of weathering the island. We should have suc-

ceeded, if the wind had not died away, and left us to the mercy of a great swell, which carried us fast toward the land, which was not two leagues distant. At length some light puffs of wind, which came with showers of rain, put us out of danger. While we lay, as it were becalmed, several of the islanders came off with hogs, fowls, fruit, and roots. At four in the afternoon, after purchasing every thing that the natives had brought off, which was full as much as we had occasion for, we made sail, and stretched to the north. At midnight we tacked, and stood to the south-east. Upon a supposition that the *Discovery* would see us tack, the signal was omitted; but she did not see us, as we afterward found, and continued standing to the north; for, at day-light next morning, she was not in sight. At six in the evening, the southernmost extreme of the island bore south-west, the nearest shore seven or eight miles distant; so that we had now succeeded in getting to the windward of the island, which we had aimed at with so much perseverance.

The *Discovery*, however, was not yet to be seen. But the wind, as we had it, being very favourable for her to follow us, I concluded that it would not be long before she joined us. We began to be in want of fresh provision on the 30th. At ten o'clock next morning, we were met by the islanders with fruit and roots; but in all the canoes were only three small pigs.

Before day-break the atmosphere was again loaded with heavy clouds; and the new year was ushered in with very hard rain, which continued at intervals till past ten o'clock. We lay to, trading with the inhabitants till three o'clock in the afternoon; when, having a tolerable supply, we made sail, with a view of proceeding to look for the *Discovery*. The three following days were spent in running down the south-east side of the island.

On the 5th in the morning, we passed the south point of the island. On this there stands a pretty large village, the inhabitants of which thronged off to the ship with hogs and women. It was not possible to keep

the latter from coming on board. This part of the country, from its appearance, did not seem capable of affording any vegetables. Marks of its having been laid waste by the explosion of a volcano, every where presented themselves: the devastation that it had made in this neighbourhood, was visible to the naked eye. Between ten and eleven next morning, we saw with pleasure the *Discovery* coming round the south point of the island; and, at one in the afternoon, she joined us. Captain Clerke then coming on board, informed me, that he had cruised four or five days where we were separated, and then plied round the east side of the island; but that, meeting with unfavourable winds, he had been carried to some distance from the coast. He had one of the islanders on board all this time, who had remained there from choice, and had refused to quit the ship, though opportunities had offered.

For several days we kept, as usual, standing off and on, with occasional visits from the natives. At day-break, on the 16th, seeing the appearance of a bay, I sent Mr. Bligh, with a boat from each ship, to examine it, being at this time three leagues off. Canoes now began to arrive from all parts; so that before ten o'clock, there were not fewer than a thousand about the two ships, most of them crowded with people, and well laden with hogs, and other productions of the island. One of our visitors took out of the ship a boat's rudder. He was discovered; but too late to recover it. I thought this a good opportunity to shew these people the use of fire-arms; and two or three muskets, and as many four-pounders, were fired over the canoe which carried off the rudder. As it was not intended that any of the shot should take effect, the surrounding multitude of natives seemed rather more surprised than frightened.

In the evening Mr. Bligh returned, and reported that he had found a bay, in which was good anchorage and fresh water. Here I resolved to carry the ships to refit, and supply ourselves with every refreshment the place could afford. Numbers of our visitors requested permission to sleep on board. Curiosity was not the only

motive, at least with some; for the next morning, several things were missing, which determined me not to entertain so many another night.

At eleven o'clock in the forenoon we anchored in the bay, which is called by the natives Karakakooa. The ships continued to be much crowded with natives, and were surrounded by a multitude of canoes. I had no where, in the course of my voyages, seen so numerous a body of people assembled at one place. For, besides those in canoes, all the shore was covered with spectators, and many hundreds were swimming round the ships like shoals of fish. We could not but be struck with the singularity of this scene; few now lamented our having failed in our endeavouring to find a northern passage homeward last summer. To this disappointment we owed our having it in our power to revisit the Sandwich Islands, and to enrich our voyage with a discovery which, though the last, seemed, in many respects, to be the most important that had hitherto been made by Europeans, throughout the extent of the Pacific Ocean.

At this island ended both the journal and the existence of Captain Cook, whose melancholy end we are now about to relate; which, with an account of the remainder of this unfortunate voyage, was written by Lieutenant King, in whose words we will continue it.

Karakakooa Bay is situated on the west side of the Island of Owhyhee, in a district called Akona. It is about a mile in depth, and bounded by two low points of land at the distance of half a league from each other. On the north point, which is flat and barren, stands the village of Kowrowa; and in the bottom of the bay, near a grove of tall cocoa-nut trees, there is another village of a more considerable size, called Kakooa. This bay appearing to Captain Cook a proper place to refit the ships, and lay in an additional supply of water and provisions, we moored on the north side. As soon

as the inhabitants perceived our intention of anchoring in the bay, they came off from the shore in astonishing numbers, and expressed their joy by singing and shouting, and exhibiting a variety of wild and extravagant gestures.

Among the chiefs that came on board the *Resolution*, was a young man called Pareea, whom we soon perceived to be a person of great authority. On presenting himself to Captain Cook, he told him that he was jakanee to the king of the island, who was at that time engaged on a military expedition at Mowee, and was expected to return within three or four days. A few presents from Captain Cook, attached him entirely to our interests, and he became exceedingly useful to us in the management of his countrymen, as we had soon occasion to experience; for we had not been long at anchor, when it was observed, that the *Discovery* had such a number of people hanging on one side, as occasioned her to heel considerably; and that the men were unable to keep off the crowds which continued pressing into her. Captain Cook, being apprehensive that she might suffer some injury, pointed out the danger to Pareea, who immediately went to their assistance, cleared the ship of its incumbrances, and drove away the canoes that surrounded her.

The authority of the chiefs over the inferior people, appeared, from this incident, to be of the most despotic kind. A similar instance of it happened the same day on board the *Resolution*, where the crowd being so great as to impede the necessary business of the ship, we were obliged to have recourse to the assistance of Kakeena, another of their chiefs, who had likewise attached himself to Captain Cook. The inconvenience we laboured under being made known, he immediately ordered his countrymen to quit the vessel; and we were not a little surprised to see them jump overboard without a moment's hesitation.

Both these chiefs were men of strong and well proportioned bodies, and of countenances remarkably pleasing; Kakeena, especially, was one of the finest

men I ever saw. He was about six feet high, had regular and expressive features, with lively dark eyes; his carriage was easy, firm, and graceful.

The inhabitants had hitherto behaved with great fairness and honesty, but we now found the case exceedingly altered. The immense crowd of islanders which blocked up every part of the ships, not only afforded frequent opportunity of pilfering, without risk of discovery; but our inferiority in number held forth a prospect of escaping with impunity, in case of detection. Another circumstance, to which we attributed this alteration in their behaviour, was the presence and encouragement of their chiefs; for generally tracing the booty into the possession of some men of consequence, we had the strongest reason to suspect that these depredations were committed at their instigation.

Soon after the Resolution had got into her station, our two friends, Pareea and Kakeena, brought on board a third chief, named Koah, who, we were told, was a priest, and had been, in his youth, a distinguished warrior. He was a little old man, of an emaciated figure; his eyes exceedingly sore and red, and his body covered with a white leprous scurf, the effects of an immoderate use of the ava. Being led into the cabin, he approached Captain Cook with great veneration, and threw over his shoulders a piece of red cloth, which he had brought along with him. Then stepping a few paces back, he made an offering of a small pig, which he held in his hand, whilst he pronounced a discourse that lasted for a considerable time.

When this ceremony was over, Koah dined with Captain Cook; eating plentifully of what was set before him; but, like the rest of the inhabitants of the islands in these seas, could scarcely be prevailed on to taste a second time our wine or spirits. In the evening, Captain Cook, attended by Mr. Bayly and myself, accompanied him on shore. We landed at the beach, and were received by four men, who carried wands tipped with dog's hair, and marched before us, pronouncing with a loud voice, a short sentence, in which we could

only distinguish the word *Orono*, a title they always gave to Captain Cook. The crowd which had been collected on the shore, retired at our approach; and not a person was to be seen, except a few lying prostrate on the ground, near the huts of the adjoining village.

Before I proceed to relate the adoration that was paid to Captain Cook, and the peculiar ceremonies with which he was received on this fatal island, it will be necessary to describe a morai, or burying-place, situated at the south-side of the beach at Kakooa. It was a square solid pile of stones, about forty yards long, twenty broad, and fourteen in height. The top was flat, and well paved, and surrounded by a wooden rail, on which were fixed the skulls of the captives sacrificed on the death of their chiefs. In the centre of the area, stood a ruinous old building of wood, connected with the rail on each side, by a stone wall, which divided the whole space into two parts. On the side next the country were five poles, upwards of twenty feet high, supporting an irregular kind of scaffold; on the opposite side, toward the sea, stood two small houses, with a covered communication.

We were conducted by Koah to the top of this pile, by an easy ascent. At the entrance we saw two large wooden images, with features violently distorted, and a long piece of carved wood, of a conical form inverted, rising from the top of their heads; the rest was without form, and wrapped round with red cloth. We were here met by a tall young man, with a long beard, who presented Captain Cook to the images; and, after chanting a kind of hymn, in which he was joined by Koah, they led us to that end of the morai where the five poles were fixed. At the foot of them were twelve images, ranged in a semicircular form, and before the middle figure stood a high stand or table, on which lay a putrid hog, and under it pieces of sugar-cane, coconuts, bread-fruits, plantains, and sweet potatoes. Koah, having placed the captain under this stand, took down the hog, and held it toward him; and after having a

second time addressed him in a long speech, pronounced with much vehemence and rapidity, he let it fall on the ground, and led him to the scaffolding, which they began to climb together, not without great risk of falling. At this time we saw, coming in solemn procession, at the entrance of the top of the morai, ten men carrying a live hog, and a large piece of red cloth. Being advanced a few paces, they stopped, and prostrated themselves; and Kaireekee, the young man above mentioned, went to them, and receiving the cloth, carried it to Koah, who wrapped it round the captain, and afterward offered him the hog, which was brought by Kaireekee with the same ceremony.

Whilst Captain Cook was aloft, in this awkward situation swathed round with red cloth, and with difficulty keeping his hold amongst the pieces of rotten scaffolding, Kaireekee and Koah began their office, chanting sometimes in concert, and sometimes alternately. This lasted a considerable time: at length Koah let the hog drop, when he and the Captain descended together. He then led him to the images before mentioned, and having said something to each in a sneering tone, snapping his fingers at them as he passed, he brought him to that in the centre, which, from its being covered with red cloth, appeared to be in greater estimation than the rest. Before this figure he prostrated himself, and kissed it; desiring Captain Cook to do the same; who suffered himself to be directed by Koah throughout the whole of this ceremony.

We were now led back into the other division of the morai, where there was a space ten or twelve feet square, sunk about three feet below the level of the area. Into this we descended, and Captain Cook was seated between two wooden idols, Koah supporting one of his arms, whilst I was desired to support the other. At this time arrived a second procession of natives, carrying a baked hog, and a pudding, some bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, and other vegetables, which were presented as before.

When this offering was concluded, the natives sat down, fronting us, and began to cut up the baked-hog, to peel the vegetables, and break the cocoa-nuts; whilst others employed themselves in brewing the ava; which is done by chewing it in the same manner as at the Friendly Islands. Kaireekkea then took part of the kernel of a cocoa-nut, which he chewed, and wrapped it in a piece of cloth, rubbed with it the captain's face, head, hands, arms, and shoulders. The ava was then handed round, and, after we had tasted it, Koah and Pareea began to pull the flesh of the hog in pieces, and to put it into our mouths. I had no great objection to be fed by Pareea, who was very cleanly in his person; but Captain Cook, who was served by Koah, recollecting the putrid hog, could not swallow a morsel; and his reluctance, as may be supposed, was not diminished, when the old man, according to his own mode of civility, had chewed it for him.

When this last ceremony was finished, which Captain Cook put an end to as soon as he decently could, we quitted the morai, after distributing amongst the people some pieces of iron, and other trifles, with which they seemed highly gratified. The men with wands conducted us to the boats, repeating the same words as before. The people again retired, and the few that remained, prostrated themselves as we passed along the shore. We immediately went on board, our minds full of what we had seen, and extremely well satisfied with the good dispositions of our new friends, whose respect to the person of Captain Cook seemed approaching to adoration.

The next morning I went on shore with a guard of eight marines, including the corporal and lieutenant, having orders to erect the observatory in such a situation as might best enable me to superintend and protect the waterers, and other working parties that were to be on shore. As we were viewing a spot conveniently situated for this purpose in the middle of the village, Pareea offered to pull down some houses that would have obstructed our observations. However, we thought it

proper to decline this offer, and fixed on a field of sweet potatoes adjoining to the morai, which was readily granted us; and the priests, to prevent the intrusion of the natives, immediately consecrated the place, by fixing their wands round the wall by which it was inclosed.

No canoes ever presumed to land near us: the natives sat on the wall, but none offered to come within the tabooed space, till he had obtained our permission. But though the men, at our request, would come across the field with provisions, yet not all our endeavours could prevail on the women to approach us. This circumstance afforded no small matter of amusement to our friends on board, where the crowds of people, and particularly of women, that continued to flock thither, obliged them almost every hour to clear the vessel, in order to have room to do the necessary duties of the ship.

From the 19th to the 24th, when Pareea and Koah left us to attend Terreeoboo, who had landed on some other part of the island, nothing very material happened on board. We had not been long settled at the observatory, before we discovered in our neighbourhood, the habitations of a society of priests, whose regular attendance at the morai had excited our curiosity. Their huts stood round a pond of water, and were surrounded by a grove of cocoa-nut-trees, which separated them from the beach and the rest of the village, and gave the place an air of religious retirement. On my acquainting Captain Cook with these circumstances, he resolved to pay them a visit; and, as he expected, was received in the same manner as before.

During the rest of the time we remained in the bay, whenever Captain Cook came on shore, he was attended by one of these priests, who went before him, giving notice that the Orono had landed, and ordering the people to prostrate themselves. The same person also constantly accompanied him on the water, standing in the bow of the boat, with a wand in his hand, and giving notice of his approach to the natives, who were in

canoes, on which they immediately left off paddling, and lay down on their faces till he had passed.

The civilities of this society, were not, however, confined to mere ceremony and parade. Our party on shore received from them, every day, a constant supply of hogs and vegetables, more than sufficient for our subsistence; and several canoes, loaded with provisions, were sent to the ships with the same punctuality. No return was ever demanded, or even hinted at in the most distant manner. Their presents were made with a regularity, more like the discharge of a religious duty, than the effect of mere liberality.

As every thing relating to the character and behaviour of this people must be interesting to the reader, on account of the tragedy that was afterwards acted here, it will be proper to acquaint him, that we had not always so much reason to be satisfied with the conduct of the warrior chiefs, or earees, as with that of our priests. In all our dealings with the former, we found them sufficiently attentive to their own interests; and besides their habit of stealing, which may admit of some excuse, from the universality of the practice amongst the islanders of these seas, they make use of other artifices equally dishonourable.

On the 24th, we were a good deal surprised to find that no canoes were suffered to put off from the shore, and that the natives kept close to their houses. After several hours suspense, we learned that the bay was tabooed, and all intercourse with us interdicted, on account of the arrival of Terreeoboo. In the afternoon of next day, Terreeoboo visited the ships in a private manner, attended only by one canoe, in which were his wife and children. He staid on board till near ten o'clock, when he returned to the village of Kowrowa.

The next day, about noon, the king in a large canoe, attended by two others, set out from the village, and paddled toward the ship in great state. Their appearance was grand and magnificent. In the first canoe was Terreeoboo and his chiefs, dressed in their rich feathered cloaks and helmets, and armed with long

spears and daggers; in the second came the venerable Kao, the chief of the priests, and his brethren, with their idols displayed on red cloth. The third canoe was filled with hogs, and various sorts of vegetables. As they went along, the priests in the centre canoe sung their hymns with great solemnity; and, after paddling round the ships, instead of going on board, as was expected, they made toward the shore at the beach where we were stationed.

As soon as I saw them approaching, I ordered out our little guard to receive the king: and Captain Cook, perceiving that he was going on shore, followed him, and arrived nearly at the same time. We conducted them into the tent, where they had scarcely been seated, when the king rose up, and in a very graceful manner threw over the captain's shoulders the cloak he himself wore, put a feathered helmet upon his head, and a curious fan into his hand. He also spread at his feet five or six other cloaks, all exceedingly beautiful, and of the greatest value. His attendants then brought four very large hogs, with sugar-canes, cocoa nuts, and bread-fruit; and this part of the ceremony was concluded by the King's exchanging names with Captain Cook, which, amongst all the islanders of the Pacific Ocean, is esteemed the strongest pledge of friendship. A procession of priests, with a venerable old personage at their head, now appeared, followed by a long train of men leading large hogs, and others carrying plantains, sweet potatoes, &c. By the looks and gestures of Kaireekaea, I immediately knew the old man to be the chief of the priests, on whose bounty we had so long subsisted. He had a piece of red cloth in his hands, which he wrapped round Captain Cook's shoulders, and afterward presented him with a small pig in the usual form.

As soon as the formalities of meeting were over, Captain Cook carried Terreeboo, and as many chiefs as the pinnace could hold, or board the Resolution. They were received with every mark of respect that could be shewn them; and Captain Cook, in return for the

feathered cloak, put a linen shirt on the king, and girt his own hanger round him. The ancient Kaoo, and about half a dozen more old chiefs, remained on shore, and took up their abode at the priests houses. During all this time not a canoe was seen in the bay, and the natives either kept within their huts, or lay prostrate on the ground.

On the 28th, Captain Clerke, whose ill health confined him, for the most part, on board, paid Terreeo-boo his first visit, at his hut on shore. He was received with the same formalities as were observed with Captain Cook; and, on his coming away, though the visit was quite unexpected, he received a present of thirty large hogs, and as much fruit and roots as his crew could consume in a week.

This day died William Watman, a seaman of the gunner's crew; who with the sincerest attachment, had followed Captain Cook's fortunes for a number of years. At the request of the king of the island, he was buried on the morai, and the ceremony was performed with as much solemnity as our situation permitted. Old Kaoo and his brethren were spectators, and preserved the most profound silence and attention, whilst the service was reading. When we began to fill up the grave, they approached it with great reverence, threw in a dead pig, some cocoa-nuts, and plantains; and for three nights afterwards, they surrounded it, sacrificing hogs, and performing their usual ceremonies of hymns and prayers, which continued till day-break.

The ships being in great want of seal, the captain desired me, on the 2d of February, to treat with the priests, for the purchase of the rail that surrounded the top of the morai. I must confess, I had at first, some doubt about the decency of this proposal, and was apprehensive, that even the bare mention of it might be considered by them, as a piece of shocking impiety. In this, however, I found myself mistaken. Not the smallest surprise was expressed at the application, and the wood was readily given, even without stipulating for any thing in return.

The next day being fixed for our departure, Terreeoboo invited Captain Cook and myself to attend him, on the 3d, to the place where Kaoo resided. On our arrival, we found the ground covered with parcels of cloth; a vast quantity of red and yellow feathers, tied to the fibres of cocoa-nut husk; and a great number of hatchets, and other pieces of iron-ware, that had been got in barter from us. At a little distance from these lay an immense quantity of vegetables of every kind, and near them was a very large herd of hogs. At first we imagined the whole to be intended as a present for us, till Kaireekeea informed, me that it was a gift, or tribute, from the people of that district to the king; and, accordingly, as soon as we were seated, they brought all the bundles, and laid them severally at Terreeoboo's feet, who gave all the hogs and vegetables, and two-thirds of the cloth, to Captain Cook and myself. We were astonished at the value and magnitude of this present, which far exceeded every thing of the kind we had seen, either at the Friendly or Society Islands.

Early in the morning of the 4th of February, we unmoored, and sailed out of the bay, and were followed by a great number of canoes. Captain Cook's design was to finish the survey of Owhyhee, before he visited the other islands, in hopes of meeting with a road better sheltered than the bay we had just left. We had calm weather this and the following day, which made our progress to the northward very slow. In the morning of the 6th, having passed the westernmost point of the island, we found ourselves abreast of a deep bay, called by the natives Toe-yah-yah. We had great hopes that this bay would furnish us with a safe and commodious harbour, as we saw to the north-east several fine streams of water. On examination, however, it was found unfit for our purpose.

After encountering some gales of wind with immaterial damage, on the 8th at day-break, we found that the foremast had given way. This accident induced Captain Cook to return to Karakakooa Bay. On the

10th, the weather became moderate, and a few canoes came off to us, from which we learnt that the late storms had done much mischief, and that several large canoes had been lost. During the remainder of the day we kept beating to windward, and before night we were within a mile of the bay; but not chusing to run on while it was dark, we stood off and on till daylight next morning, when we dropt anchor nearly in the same place as before.

We were employed the whole of the 11th, and part of the 12th, in getting out the foremast, and sending it, with the carpenters, on shore. As these repairs were likely to take up several days, Mr. Bayly and myself got the astronomical apparatus on shore the 12th, and pitched our tents on the morai, having with us a guard of a corporal and six marines. We renewed our friendly correspondence with the priests, who, for the greater security of the workmen and their tools, tabooed the place where the mast lay, sticking their wands round it as before. The sail-makers were also sent on shore, to repair the damages which had taken place in their department during the late gales.

Upon coming to anchor, we were surprised to find our reception very different from what it had been on our first arrival; no shouts, no bustle, no confusion; but a solitary bay, with only here and there a canoe stealing close along the shore. The impulse of curiosity, which had before operated to so great a degree, might now, indeed, be supposed to have ceased; but the hospitable treatment we had invariably met with, and the friendly footing on which we parted, gave us some reason to expect that they would again have flocked about us with great joy on our return.

We were forming various conjectures upon the occasion of this extraordinary appearance, when our anxiety was at length relieved by the return of a boat which had been sent on shore, and brought us word that Terreeboo was absent, and had left the bay under the taboo. Though this account appeared very satisfactory to most of us, yet others were of opinion, that the inter-

dict
king
the
us.
the
were
prob
see
after
hend
cond
the n
Cook
form
that
of co
To
who
came
the
whom
the o
that
and
At h
him,
short
me r
and
the
Seein
on r
drive
assis
So
by a
whic
saw
by o
that

dictation of all intercourse with us, on pretence of the king's absence, was only to give him time to consult the chiefs in what manner it might be proper to treat us. Whether these suspicions were well founded, or the account given by the natives was the truth, we were never able to ascertain. For though it is not improbable that our sudden return, for which they could see no apparent cause, and the necessity of which we afterward found it very difficult to make them comprehend, might occasion some alarm; yet the unsuspecting conduct of Terreeoboo, who, on his supposed arrival the next morning, came immediately to visit Captain Cook, and the consequent return of the natives to their former friendly intercourse with us, are strong proofs that they neither meant, nor apprehended, any change of conduct.

Towards the evening of the 13th, however, the officer who commanded the watering party of the *Discovery*, came to inform me, that several chiefs had assembled at the well near the beach, driving away the natives, whom we had hired to assist the sailors in rolling down the casks to the shore. He told me at the same time, that he thought their behaviour extremely suspicious, and that they ment to give him some farther disturbance. At his request, therefore, I sent a marine along with him, but suffered him to take only his side-arms. In a short time the officer returned, and on his acquainting me that the islanders had armed themselves with stones, and were grown very tumultuous, I went myself to the spot, attended by a marine, with his musket. Seeing us approach, they threw away their stones; and on my speaking to some of the chiefs, the mob were driven away, and those who chose it, were suffered to assist in filling the casks.

Soon after our return to the tents, we were alarmed by a continued fire of muskets, from the *Discovery*, which we observed to be directed at a canoe that we saw paddling towards the shore in great haste, pursued by one of our small boats. We immediately concluded that the firing was in consequence of some theft, and

Captain Cook ordered me to follow him with a marine armed, and to endeavour to seize the people as they came on shore. Accordingly we ran towards the place where we supposed the canoe would land, but were too late; the people having quitted it, and made their escape into the country before our arrival; but the goods stolen had been recovered.

During our absence, a difference of a more serious and unpleasant nature had happened. The officer, who had been sent in the small boat, and was returning on board with the goods which had been restored, observing Captain Cook and me engaged in the pursuit of the offenders, thought it his duty to seize the canoe, which was left drawn up on the shore. Unfortunately this canoe belonged to Pareea, who arriving at the same moment from on board the *Discovery*, claimed his property with many protestations of his innocence. The officer refusing to give it up, and being joined by the crew of the pinnace, a scuffle ensued, in which Pareea was knocked down by a violent blow upon his head with an oar. The natives, who were collected about the spot, and had hitherto been peaceable spectators, immediately attacked our people with such a shower of stones, as forced them to retreat with great precipitation, and swim off to a rock at some distance from the shore. The pinnace was immediately ransacked by the islanders; and but for the timely interposition of Pareea, who seemed to have recovered from the blow, and forgot it at the same instant, would soon have been entirely demolished. Having driven away the crowd, he made signs to our people; that they might come and take possession of the pinnace, and that he would endeavour to get back the things which had been taken out of it. After their departure, he followed them in his canoe, with a midshipman's cap, and some other trifling articles of the plunder, and with much apparent concern at what had happened, asked if the *Orono* would kill him, and whether he would permit him to come on board next day. On being assured that he should be well received, he joined noses (as their cus-

tom is) with the officers, in token of friendship, and paddled over to the village of Kowrowa.

When Captain Cook was informed of what had passed, he expressed much uneasiness at it; and, as we were returning on board, "I am afraid," said he, "that these people will oblige me to use some violent measures; for (added he) they must not be left to imagine, that they have gained an advantage over us."

Next morning, the 14th, at day-light, I went on board the Resolution for the time-keeper, and in my way was hailed by the Discovery, and informed that their cutter had been stolen during the night, from the buoy where it was moored. When I arrived on board, I found the marines arming, and Captain Cook loading his double-barrelled gun. It had been his usual practice, whenever any thing of consequence was lost at any of the islands in this ocean, to get the king or some of the principal earees on board, and to keep them as hostages till it was restored. This method, which had been always attended with success, he meant to pursue on the present occasion.

It was between seven and eight o'clock when we quitted the ship together; Captain Cook in the pin-nace, having Mr. Phillips and nine marines with him, and myself in the small boat. The last orders I received from him were, to quiet the minds of the natives, on our side of the bay, by assuring them they should not be hurt; to keep my people together, and to be on my guard. We then parted; the captain went towards Kowrowa, where the king resided; and I proceeded to the beach. My first care on going on shore, was, to give strict orders to the marines to remain within the tent, to load their pieces with ball, and not to quit their arms. Afterwards I took a walk to the huts of old Kaoo and the priests, and explained to them, as well as I could, the object of the hostile preparations, which had exceedingly alarmed them. I found that they had already heard of the cutter's being stolen, and I assured them, that though Captain Cook

was resolved to recover it, and to punish the authors of the theft, yet that they, and the people of the village on our side, need not be under the smallest apprehension of suffering any evil from us. Kaoo asked me with great earnestness, if Terreeoboo was to be hurt; I assured him he was not; and both he and the rest of his brethren seemed much satisfied with this assurance.

In the mean time, Captain Cook having called off the launch, which was stationed at the north point of the bay, and taken it along with him, proceeded to Kowrowa, and landed with the lieutenant and nine marines. He immediately marched to the village, where he was received with the usual marks of respect; the people prostrating themselves before him, and bringing their accustomed offerings of small hogs. Finding that there was no suspicion of his design, his next step was to enquire for Terreeoboo, and the two boys, his sons, who had been his constant guests on board the Resolution. In a short time the boys returned along with the natives, who had been sent in search of them, and immediately led Captain Cook to the house where the king had slept. They found the old man just awoke from sleep; and after a short conversation about the loss of the cutter, from which Captain Cook was convinced that he was in no wise privy to it, he invited him to return in the boat, and spend the day on board the Resolution. To this proposal the king readily consented, and immediately got up to accompany him.

Things were in this prosperous train; the two boys being already in the pinnace, and the rest of the party, having advanced near the water-side, when an elderly woman, called Kanee-kabareea, the mother of the boys, and one of the king's favourite wives, came after him, and with many tears and entreaties, besought him not to go on board. At the same time two chiefs, who came along with her, laid hold of him, and insisting that he should go no farther, forced him to sit down. The natives, who were collecting in prodigious numbers along the shore, and had probably been alarmed by the firing of the great guns, and the appearances of hostility

in
the
obs
the
any
to
edg
pass
abou
sittin
A
with
coun
obje
urge
whil
inclu
inter
terw
on hi
findin
that
with
to M
him
a gre
T
Cook
his p
ger,
to th
acros
atten
of th
villag
king,
ferm
men
men
spear

in the bay, began to throng round Captain Cook and their king. In this situation, the lieutenant of marines, observing that his men were huddled close together in the crowd, and thus incapable of using their arms, if any occasion should require it, proposed to the captain to draw them up along the rocks close to the water's edge; and the crowd readily making way for them to pass, they were drawn up in a line at the distance of about thirty yards from the place where the king was sitting.

All this time the old king remained on the ground, with the strongest marks of terror and dejection in his countenance; Captain Cook, not willing to abandon the object for which he had come on shore, continuing to urge him in the most pressing manner to proceed; whilst, on the other hand, whenever the king appeared inclined to follow him, the chiefs, who stood round him, interposed, at first with prayers and entreaties, but afterwards having recourse to force and violence, insisted on his staying where he was. Captain Cook, therefore, finding that the alarm had spread too generally, and that it was in vain to think any longer of getting him off without bloodshed, at last gave up the point; observing to Mr. Phillips, that it would be impossible to compel him to go on board, without running the risk of killing a great number of the inhabitants.

Though the enterprise which had carried Captain Cook on shore, had now failed, and was abandoned, yet his person did not appear to have been in the least danger, till an accident happened which gave a fatal turn to the affair. The boats, which had been stationed across the bay, having fired at some canoes that were attempting to get out, unfortunately had killed a chief of the first rank. The news of his death arrived at the village where Captain Cook was, just as he had left the king, and was walking slowly toward the shore. The ferment it occasioned was very conspicuous; the women and children were immediately sent off, and the men put on their war-mats, and armed themselves with spears and stones. One of the natives, having in his

hands a stone and a long iron spike, (which they called a pahooa,) came up to the captain, flourishing his weapon by way of defiance, and threatening to throw the stone. The Captain desired him to desist; but the man persisting in his insolence, he was at length provoked to fire a load of small shot. The man having his mat on, which the shot were not able to penetrate, this had no other effect than to irritate and encourage them. Several stones were thrown at the marines; and one of the carees attempted to stab Mr. Phillips with his pahooa, but failed in the attempt, and received from him a blow with the but-end of his musket. Captain Cook now fired his second barrel, loaded with ball, and killed one of the foremost of the natives. A general attack with stones immediately followed, which was answered by a discharge of musketry from the marines and the people in the boats. The islanders, contrary to the expectations of every one, stood the fire with great firmness; and before the marines had time to reload, they broke in upon them with dreadful shouts and yells. What followed, was a scene of the utmost horror and confusion.

Four of the marines were cut off amongst the rocks in their retreat, and fell a sacrifice to the fury of the enemy; three more were dangerously wounded; and the lieutenant, who had received a stab between the shoulders with a pahooa, having fortunately reserved his fire, shot the man who had wounded him, just as he was going to repeat his blow. Our unfortunate commander, the last time he was seen distinctly, was standing at the water's edge, and calling out to the boats to cease firing, and to pull in. Whilst he faced the natives, none of them had offered him any violence; but having turned about, to give his orders to the boats, he was stabbed in the back, and fell with his face into the water. On seeing him fall, the islanders set up a great shout; and his body was immediately dragged on shore, and surrounded by the enemy, who, snatching the dagger out of each other's hands, shewed a savage eagerness to have a share in his destruction.

Thus fell our great and excellent commander ! After a life of so much distinguished and successful enterprize, his death, as far as regards himself, cannot be reckoned premature ; since he lived to finish the great work for which he seems to have been designed ; and was rather removed from the enjoyment, than cut off from the acquisition, of glory. How sincerely his loss was felt and lamented by those who had so long found their general security in his skill and conduct, and every consolation, under their hardships, in his tenderness and humanity, it is neither necessary nor possible for me to describe ; much less shall I attempt to paint the horror with which we were struck, and the universal dejection and dismay which followed so dreadful and unexpected a calamity.

It has been already related, that four of the marines, who attended Captain Cook, were killed by the islanders on the spot. The rest, with Mr. Phillips, their lieutenant, threw themselves into the water, and escaped under cover of a smart fire from the boats. On this occasion, a remarkable instance of gallant behaviour, and of affection for his men, was shewn by that officer. For he had scarcely got into the boat, when seeing one of the marines, who was a bad swimmer, struggling in the water, and in danger of being taken by the enemy, he immediately jumped into the sea to his assistance, though much wounded himself ; and, after receiving a blow on the head from a stone, which had nearly sent him to the bottom, he caught the man by the hair, and brought him safe off.

As soon as the general consternation, which the news of this calamity occasioned throughout both crews, had a little subsided, their attention was called to our party at the morai, where the masts and sails were on shore, with a guard of only six marines. It is impossible for me to describe the emotions of my own mind, during the time these transactions had been carrying on at the other side of the bay. Being at the distance only of a short mile from the village of Kowrowa, we could see distinctly, an immense crowd collected on the spot

where Captain Cook had just before landed. We heard the firing of the musketry, and could perceive some extraordinary bustle and agitation in the multitude. We afterwards saw the natives flying, the boats retire from the shore, and passing and repassing, in great stillness, between the ships. I must confess that my heart soon misgave me. Where a life so dear and valuable was concerned, it was impossible not to be alarmed, by appearances both new and threatening.

My first care, on hearing the muskets fired, was, to assure the people, who were assembled in considerable numbers round the wall of our consecrated field, and seemed equally at a loss with ourselves how to account for what they had seen and heard, that they should not be molested; and that, at all events, I was desirous of continuing on peaceable terms with them. We remained in this posture till the boats had returned on board, when Captain Clerke, observing through his telescope, that we were surrounded by the natives, and apprehending they meant to attack us, ordered two four-pounders to be fired at them. Fortunately these guns, though well aimed, did no mischief, and yet gave the natives a convincing proof of their power. One of the balls broke a cocoa-nut tree in the middle, under which a party of them were sitting; and the other shivered a rock that stood in an exact line with them. As I had just before given them the strongest assurances of their safety, I was exceedingly mortified at this act of hostility; and to prevent a repetition of it, immediately dispatched a boat to acquaint Captain Clerke, that at present I was on the most friendly terms with the natives; and that, if occasion should hereafter arise, for altering my conduct towards them, I would hoist a jack, as a signal for him to afford us all the assistance in his power.

We expected the return of the boat with the utmost impatience; and after remaining a quarter of an hour, under the most torturing anxiety and suspense, our fears were at length confirmed, by the arrival of Mr. Bligh, with orders to strike the tents as quickly as pos-

sible, and to send the sails, that were repairing, on board. Just at the same moment, our friend Kairee-keea, having also received intelligence of the death of Captain Cook, from a native who had arrived from the other side of the bay, came to me with great sorrow and dejection in his countenance, to enquire if it was true.

Having placed the marines on the tops of the morai, which formed a strong and advantageous post, and left the command with Mr. Bligh, giving him the most positive directions to act entirely on the defensive, I went on board the Discovery, in order to represent to Captain Clerke the dangerous situation of our affairs. As soon as I quitted the spot, the natives began to annoy our people with stones; and I had scarcely reached the ship, before I heard the firing of the marines. I therefore returned instantly on shore, where I found things growing every moment more alarming. The natives were arming, and putting on their mats; and their numbers increased very fast. I could also perceive several large bodies marching towards us, along the cliff which separates the village of Kakooa from the north side of the bay, where the village of Kowroa is situated.

They began at first to attack us with stones, from behind the walls of their inclosures, and finding no resistance on our part, they soon grew more daring. A few resolute fellows having crept along the beach, under cover of the rocks, suddenly made their appearance at the foot of the morai, with a design, as it seemed, of storming it on the side next the sea, which was its only accessible part; and were not dislodged, till after they had stood a considerable number of shot, and seen one of their party fall.

About this time, a strong reinforcement from both ships having landed, the natives retreated behind their walls; which giving me access to our friendly priests, I sent one of them to endeavour to bring their countrymen to some terms, and to propose to them, that if they would desist from throwing stones, I would not

permit our men to fire. This truce was agreed to; and we were suffered to launch the mast, and carry off the sails and our astronomical apparatus unmolested. As soon as we had quitted the morai, they took possession of it, and some of them threw a few stones, but without doing us any mischief.

It was half an hour past eleven o'clock when I got on board the *Discovery*, where I found no decisive plan had been adopted for our future proceedings. The restitution of the boat, and the recovery of the body of Captain Cook, were the objects which, on all hands, we agreed to insist on; and it was my opinion, that some vigorous steps should be taken, in case the demand of them was not immediately complied with. However, after mature deliberation, it was determined to accomplish these points by conciliatory measures, if possible.

In pursuance of this plan, it was determined that I should proceed toward the shore, with the boats of both ships, well manned and armed, with a view to bring the natives to a parley, and, if possible, to obtain a conference with some of the chiefs. I left the ships about four o'clock in the afternoon, and as we approached the shore, I perceived every indication of a hostile reception. The whole crowd of natives was in motion; the women and children retiring; the men putting on their war-mats, and arming themselves with long spears and daggers. Concluding, therefore, that all attempts to bring them to a parley would be in vain, unless I first gave them some ground for mutual confidence, I ordered the armed boats to stop, and went on in the small boat alone, with a white flag in my hand, which by a general cry of joy from the natives, I had the satisfaction to find was instantly understood. The women immediately returned from the side of the hill, whither they had retired; the men threw off their mats; and all sat down together by the water-side, extending their arms, and inviting me to come on shore.

Though this behaviour was very expressive of a friendly disposition, yet I could not help entertaining some

suspicions of its sincerity: but when I saw Koah, with a boldness and assurance altogether unaccountable, swimming off towards the boat, with a white flag in his hand, I thought it necessary to return this mark of confidence, and therefore received him into the boat, though armed; a circumstance which did not tend to lessen my suspicions. I must confess, I had long harboured an unfavourable opinion of this man. I told him that I had come to demand the body of Captain Cook, and to declare war against them unless it was instantly restored. He assured me this should be done as soon as possible, and that he would go himself for that purpose; and after begging of me a piece of iron, with as much assurance as if nothing extraordinary had happened, he leaped into the sea, and swam on shore, calling out to his countrymen that we were all friends again.

We waited near an hour, with great anxiety, for his return; during which time, the rest of the boats had approached so near the shore, as to enter into conversation with a party of the natives, at some distance from us, by whom they were plainly given to understand, that the body had been cut to pieces, and carried up the country; but of this circumstance I was not informed till our return to the ships. After various delays, negotiations, and hostile preparations, about eight o'clock, it being very dark, a canoe was heard paddling towards the ship; and, as soon as it was seen, both the sentinels on deck fired into it. There were two persons in the canoe, and they immediately roared out *Tinne*, (which was the way in which they pronounced my name,) and said they were friends, and had something for me belonging to Captain Cook. When they came on board, they threw themselves at our feet, and appeared extremely frightened. Luckily neither of them was hurt, notwithstanding the balls of both pieces had gone through the canoe. One of them was the man who attended Captain Cook, with the circumstances of ceremony already described; and who, though a man of rank in the island, could scarcely be hindered from performing for him the lowest offices of a menial servant. After lamenting, with

abundance of tears, the loss of the Orono, he told us that he had brought us a part of his body. He then presented to us a small bundle, wrapped up in cloth, which he brought under his arm; and it is impossible to describe the horror which seized us, on finding in it a piece of human flesh, about nine or ten pounds weight. This, he said, was all that remained of the body; that the rest was cut to pieces and burnt; but that the head, and all the bones, except what belonged to the trunk, were in the possession of Terreoboo, and the other carees; that what we saw, had been allotted to Kaoo, the chief of the priests, to be made use of in some religious ceremony; and that he had sent it, as a proof of his innocence and attachment to us.

We pressed our two friendly visitors to remain on board till morning, but in vain. We learned from these men, that seventeen of their countrymen were killed in the first action at Kowrowa, of whom five were chiefs; and that Kaneena and his brother, our very particular friends, were unfortunately of that number. Eight, they said, were killed at the observatory; three of whom were also of the first rank.

This day a man had the audacity to come within musket shot, ahead of the ship; and, after slinging several stones at us, he waved Captain Cook's hat over his head, whilst his countrymen on shore were exulting, and encouraging his boldness. Our people were all in a flame at this insult, and, coming in a body on the quarter-deck, begged they might no longer be obliged to put up with these repeated provocations; and requested me to obtain permission for them, from Captain Clerke, to avail themselves of the first fair occasion of revenging the death of their commander. On my acquainting him with what was passing, he gave orders for some great guns to be fired at the natives on shore; and promised the crew, that if they should meet with any molestation at the watering-place, the next day, they should then be left at liberty to chastise them.

At night, the usual precautions were taken for the security of the ships; and as soon as it was dark, our

two friends, who had visited us the night before, came off again. They assured us, that though the effect of our great guns this afternoon had terrified the chiefs exceedingly, they had by no means laid aside their hostile intentions, and advised us to be on our guard. The next morning, the boats of both ships were sent on shore for water; and the Discovery was warped close to the beach, in order to cover that service. We soon found that the intelligence which the priests had sent us, was not without foundation; and that the natives were resolved to take every opportunity of annoying us, when it could be done without much risk.

The men being ordered to burn a few straggling huts, which afforded shelter to the natives, we, who were on board, were a good deal surprised to see the whole village on fire; and before a boat, that was sent to stop the progress of the mischief, could reach the shore, the houses of our old and constant friends, the priests, were all in flames. I cannot enough lament the illness that confined me on board this day. The priests had always been under my protection. Several of the natives were shot in making their escape from the flames; and our people cut off the heads of two of them, and brought them on board. The fate of one poor islander was much lamented by us all. As he was coming to the well for water, he was shot at by one of the marines. The ball struck his calibash, which he immediately threw from him, and fled. He was pursued into one of the caves I have before described, and no lion could have defended his den with greater courage and fierceness; till, at last, after having kept two of our people at bay for a considerable time, he expired covered with wounds.

In the evening, the watering party returned on board, having met with no further interruption. We passed a gloomy night; the cries and lamentations we heard on shore, being far more dreadful than ever. Our only consolation was, the hope that we should have no occasion, in future, for a repetition of such severities.

Between ten and eleven o'clock, on the 20th, we saw a great number of people descending the hill, which

is over the beach, in a kind of procession; each man carrying a sugar-cane, or two, on his shoulders, and bread-fruit, taro, and plantains, in his hand. They were preceded by two drummers; who, when they came to the water-side, sat down by a white flag, and began to beat their drums; while those who had followed them, advanced one by one; and having deposited the presents they had brought, retired in the same order. Soon after, Eappo came in sight, in his long feathered cloak, bearing something with great solemnity in his hands; and having placed himself on a rock, he made signs for a boat to be sent him.

Captain Clerke, conjecturing that he had brought the bones of Captain Cook, which proved to be the fact, went himself in the pinnace to receive them; and ordered me to attend him in the cutter. When we arrived at the beach, Eappo came into the pinnace, and delivered to the captain, the bones, wrapped up in a large quantity of fine new cloth, and covered with a spotted cloak of black and white feathers. He afterwards attended us to the Resolution, but could not be prevailed upon to go on board; probably, not chusing, from a sense of decency, to be present at the opening of the bundle. We found in it both the hands of Captain Cook entire, which were well known from a remarkable scar on one of them, that divided the thumb from the fore-finger, the whole length of the metacarpal bone; the skull, but with the scalp separated from it, and the bones that form the face wanting; the scalp, with the hair upon it, cut short, and the ears adhering to it; the bones of both arms, with the skin of the fore-arms hanging to them; the thigh and leg-bones joined together, but without the feet. The ligaments of the joints were entire; and the whole bore evident marks of having been in the fire, except the hands, which had the flesh left upon them, and were cut in several places, and crammed with salt, apparently with an intention of preserving them. The scalp had a cut in the back part of it; but the skull was free from any fracture. The lower jaw and feet, which were want-

ing, Eappo told us, had been seized by different chiefs, and that Terreeoboo was using every means to recover them.

The next morning, Eappo and the King's son came on board, and brought with them the remaining bones of Captain Cook; the barrels of his gun, his shoes, and some other trifles that belonged to him. Eappo took great pains to convince us, that Terreeoboo, Maihamaiha, and himself, were most heartily desirous of peace; that they had given us the most convincing proof of it in their power; and that they had been prevented from giving it sooner by the other chiefs, many of whom were still our enemies. We found the cutter had been broken up.

Nothing now remained but to perform the last offices to our great and unfortunate commander. Eappo was dismissed with orders to taboo all the bay; and, in the afternoon, the bones, having been put into a coffin, and the service read over them, they were committed to the deep, with the usual military honors. What our feelings were on this occasion, I leave the world to conceive; those who were present, know that it is not in my power to express them.

During the forenoon of the 22d, not a canoe was seen paddling in the bay; the taboo, which Eappo had laid on it the day before, at our request, not being yet taken off. At length Eappo came off to us. We assured him, that we were now entirely satisfied; and that, as the Orono was buried, all remembrance of what had passed was buried with him. We afterwards desired him to take off the taboo, and to make it known, that the people might bring their provisions as usual. The ships were soon surrounded with canoes, and many of the chiefs came on board, expressing great sorrow at what had happened, and their satisfaction at our reconciliation. Several of our friends, who did not visit us, sent presents of large hogs, and other provisions. Amongst the rest came the old treacherous Koah, but was refused admittance.

As we had now every thing ready for sea, about eight o'clock this evening we dismissed all the natives; Eappo, and the friendly Kaireckeea, took an affectionate leave of us. We immediately weighed, and stood out of the bay. The natives were collected on the shore in great numbers; and as we passed along, received our last farewells with every mark of affection and good will.

We got clear of the land about ten on the 22d, and hoisting in the boats, stood to the northward. After touching at Woahoo, where it was found watering would have been inconvenient, Captain Clerke determined, without further loss of time, to proceed to Atooi. On the 28th, we bore away for that island, which we were in sight of by noon; and about sun-set, were off its eastern extremity.

On the 8th, at nine in the morning, we weighed, and sailed towards Oneeheow; and at three in the afternoon, anchored in twenty fathoms water, nearly on the same spot as in the year 1778. On the 12th, the weather being moderate, the master was sent to the north-west side of the island, to look for a more convenient place for anchoring. He returned in the evening, having found a fine bay with good anchorage; also, to the eastward were four small wells of good water, the road to them level, and fit for rolling casks.

On the 15th of March, at seven in the morning, we weighed anchor, and passing to the north of Tahoorā, stood on to the south-west. On the 23d, the wind, which had been moderate for some time, freshened, and increased to a strong gale, which split some of our old sails, and made the running rigging very frequently give way. This gale lasted twelve hours; it then became more moderate, and continued so till the 25th at noon, when we entirely lost it, and had only a very light air. On the 30th, the winds, and unsettled state of the weather, induced Captain Clerke to alter his plan; and at six in the evening, we began to steer north-west, which we continued till the 6th of April, when we lost the trade wind.

On the 12th, the wind came gradually round to the east, and increased to a strong gale. Ever since we left the Sandwich Islands, we had been incommoded by a leak, which made twelve inches of water every hour; but as we had always been able to keep it under with the hand-pumps, it gave us no great uneasiness, till the 13th, when we were greatly alarmed by a sudden inundation that deluged the whole space between decks. The water, which had lodged in the coal-hole, not finding a sufficient vent into the well, had forced up the platforms over it, and in a moment set every thing afloat. Our situation was, indeed, exceedingly distressing; nor did we immediately see any means of relieving ourselves. As soon as a passage was made for it, the greatest part of the water emptied itself into the well, and enabled us to get out the rest with buckets; but the leak was now so much increased, that we were obliged to keep one half of the people constantly pumping, and baleing, till the noon of the 15th. Our men bore, with great cheerfulness, this excessive fatigue; which was much increased by their having no dry place to sleep in; and, on this account, we began to serve their full allowance of grog.

On the 21st, we saw a whale, and a land-bird; and in the afternoon, the water looking muddy, we sounded, but got no ground, with a hundred and forty fathoms of line. During the three preceding days, we saw large flocks of wild fowl, of a species resembling ducks. This is usually considered as a proof of the vicinity of land; but we had no other signs of it since the 16th, in which time we had run upwards of a hundred and fifty leagues.

On the 22d, the cold was exceedingly severe, and the ropes were so frozen, that it was with difficulty we could force them through the blocks. On the 23d, at six in the morning, the land appeared in mountains, covered with snow, and extending from north-east to south-west, a high conical rock, bearing south-west, at three or four leagues distance. We had no sooner taken this imperfect view, than we were covered with

a thick fog. As soon as the weather cleared up, we stood in to take a nearer view of the land, and a more dismal and dreary prospect I never beheld. The coast appears straight and uniform, having no inlets or bays; the ground from the shore rises in hills of a moderate elevation, behind which are ranges of mountains, whose summits were lost in the clouds. The whole scene was entirely covered with snow, except the sides of some of the cliffs, which rose too abruptly from the sea for the snow to lie upon them.

The wind continued blowing very strong from the north-east, with thick hazy weather and sleet, from the 24th till the 28th. The ship appeared to be a complete mass of ice; the shrouds were so incrustated with it, as to measure in circumference more than double their usual size; and, in short, the experience of the oldest seaman among us had never met with any thing like the continued showers of sleet, and the extreme cold which we now encountered. On the 28th, in the morning, the weather at last cleared, and the wind fell to a light breeze from the same quarter as before. We had a fine warm day; and as we now began to expect a thaw, the men were employed in breaking the ice from off the rigging, masts, and sails, in order to prevent its falling on our heads. About three in the afternoon, a fair wind sprung up from the southward, with which we stood in for Awatska Bay.

During the night, much ice drifted by us with the tide; and at day-light I was sent with the boats to examine the bay, and deliver the letters we had brought from Oonalashka to the Russian commander. As we approached, we observed a few men hurrying backwards and forwards; and presently after a sledge, drawn by dogs, with one of the inhabitants in it, came down to the sea-side opposite to us. Whilst we were gazing at this unusual sight, and admiring the great civility of this stranger, which we imagined had brought him to our assistance, the man, after viewing us for some time very attentively, turned short round, and went off with great speed towards the ostrog. We were not less

chagrined than disappointed at this abrupt departure, as we began to find our journey over the ice attended not only with great difficulty, but even with danger.

At length we arrived at the house of the commanding officer of the party, into which we were ushered ; and after no small stir in giving orders, and disposing of the military without doors, our host made his appearance, accompanied by another person, whom we understood to be the secretary of the port. One of Ismyloff's letters was now opened, and the other sent off by a special messenger to Bolcheretsk, a town on the west side of the peninsula of Kamtschatka, where the Russian commander of this province usually resides.

After taking some refreshment, we departed ; and a sledge, drawn by five dogs, with a driver, was immediately provided for each of our party. The sailors were highly delighted with this mode of conveyance ; and what diverted them still more was, that the two boat-hooks had also a sledge appropriated to themselves. On our return, we found the boats towing the ship towards the village ; and at seven we got close to the ice, and moored. Next morning the carpenters were set to work to stop the leak which had given us so much trouble during our last run. Several of our gentlemen paid their visits to the commander, by whom they were received with great civility ; and Captain Clerke sent him two bottles of rum, which he understood would be the most acceptable present he could make him, and received in return, some fine fowls of the grouse kind, and twenty trouts.

The following morning, on our observing two sledges drive into the village, Captain Clerke sent me on shore, to enquire whether any message was arrived from the commander of Kamtschatka, which might now be expected, in consequence of the intelligence that had been sent of our arrival.

The return of the commander's answer was, however, concealed from us for the present ; and I was told, on my arrival at the ostrog, that we should hear from him the next day. About ten o'clock next fore-

noon, we saw several sledges driving down to the edge of the ice, and sent a boat to conduct the persons who were in them on board. One of these was a Russian merchant from Bolcheretsk, named Fedositsch, and the other a German, called Port, who had brought a letter from Major Behm, the commander of Kamtschatka, to Captain Clerke. When they got to the edge of the ice, and saw distinctly the size of the ships, which lay within about two hundred yards from them, they appeared to be exceedingly alarmed; and before they would venture to embark, desired two of our boat's crew might be left on shore as hostages for their safety. We afterwards found that Ismyloff, in his letter to the commander, had misrepresented us, for what reasons we could not conceive, as two small trading boats; and that the sergeant, who had only seen the ships at a distance, had not, in his dispatches, rectified the mistake.

When they arrived on board, we still found, from their cautious and timorous behaviour, that they were under some unaccountable apprehensions; and an uncommon degree of satisfaction was visible in their countenances, on the German's finding a person amongst us, with whom he could converse. This was Mr. Webber, who spoke that language exceedingly well. Mr. Port being introduced to Captain Clerke, delivered to him the commander's letter, which was written in German, inviting him and his officers to Bolcheretsk. Mr. Port, at the same time, acquainted him, that the major had conceived a very wrong idea of the size of the ships, and of the service we were engaged in; Ismyloff, in his letter, having represented us as two small English packet boats, and cautioned him to be on his guard; insinuating, that he suspected us to be no better than pirates.

Being now enabled to converse with the Russians, by the aid of our interpreter, our first enquiries were directed to the means of procuring a supply of fresh provisions and naval stores; from the want of which we had been for some time in great distress. On enquiry,

it appeared that the whole stock of live cattle, which the country about the bay could furnish, amounted only to two heifers; and these the sergeant very readily promised to procure us. Our applications were next made to the merchant; but we found the terms upon which he offered to serve us, so exorbitant, that Captain Clerke thought it necessary to send an officer to visit the commander at Bolcheretsk, and to enquire into the price of stores at that place.

Captain Clerke having thought proper to fix on me for this service, I received orders, together with Mr. Webber, who was to accompany me as an interpreter, to be ready to set out the next day. Captain Gore was now added to our party, and we were attended by Messrs. Port and Fedositch, with two Cossacks, and were provided by our conductors with warm furred clothing; a precaution which we soon found very necessary, as it began to snow briskly just after we set out.

On the morning of the second day, we were met by the Toion, or Chief of Karatchin, who had been apprized of our coming, and had provided canoes that were lighter, and better contrived for navigating the higher parts of the river Awatska. We now went on very rapidly, the Toion's people being both stout and fresh, and remarkable for their expertness in this business. At ten we got to the ostrog, the seat of his command, where we were received at the water-side by the Kamtschadale men and women, and some Russian servants belonging to Fedositch, who were employed in making canoes. They were all dressed out in their best clothes.

We were now to quit the river, and perform the next part of our journey on sledges. As we did not chuse to trust to our own skill, we had each of us a man to drive and guide the sledge, which, from the state the roads were now in, proved a very laborious business. I had a very good-humoured Cossack to attend me, who was, however, so very unskilful in his business, that we were overturned almost every minute, to the great entertainment of the rest of the company.

Our party consisted, in all, of ten sledges. That in which Captain Gore was carried, was made of two lashed together, and abundantly provided with furs and bear skins; it had ten dogs, yoked four abreast; as had also some of those that were heavy laden with baggage.

When we had proceeded about four miles, it began to rain; which, added to the darkness of the night, threw us all into confusion. It was, at last, agreed, that we should remain where we were till day-light; and, accordingly, wrapping ourselves up in our furs, we waited patiently for morning. About three o'clock we were called on to set out, our guides being apprehensive that if we waited longer, we might be stopped by the thaw, and neither be able to proceed nor to return. After encountering many difficulties, which were principally occasioned by the bad condition of the road, at two in the afternoon we got safe to an ostrog, called Natcheechin.

The next morning we embarked on the Bolchoireka in canoes. About nine in the forenoon we arrived at an ostrog called Opatchin, which is computed to be fifty miles from Natcheechin, and is nearly of the same size as Karatchin. We found here a sergeant with four Russian soldiers, who had been two days waiting for our arrival; and who immediately dispatched a light boat to Bolcheretsk with intelligence of our approach. The remainder of our passage was performed with great facility and expedition, the river growing more rapid as we descended, and less obstructed by shoals.

As we approached the capital, we were sorry to observe, from an appearance of much stir and bustle, that we were to be received in form. Decent clothes had been, for some time, a scarce commodity among us; and our travelling dresses were made up of a burlesque mixture of European, Indian, and Kamtschadale fashions. The manner in which we were received by the commander, was the most engaging that could be conceived, and increased by mortification at finding, that he had almost entirely forgotten the French lan-

guage; so that the satisfaction of conversing with him was wholly confined to Mr. Webber, who spoke the German, his native tongue. In company with Major Behm was Captain Shamaleff, the second in command, and another officer, with the whole body of the merchants of the place. They conducted us to the commander's house, where we were received by his lady with great civility, and found tea and other refreshments prepared for us.

About seven o'clock, the commander, conceiving we might be fatigued with our journey, and desirous of taking some repose, begged he might conduct us to our lodgings. In our way we passed by two guard-houses, where the men were turned out under arms, in compliment to Captain Gore; and were afterward brought to a very neat and decent house, which the Major gave us to understand was to be our residence during our stay. Two sentinels were posted at the door; and, in a house adjoining, there was a sergeant's guard. Here the Major took his leave, with a promise to see us next day.

Early in the morning, we received the compliments of the commander, of Captain Shamaleff, and of the principal inhabitants of the town, who all honoured us with visits soon after. The two first having sent for Port, after we were gone to rest, and enquired of him, what articles we seemed to be the most in want of on board the ships, we found them prepared to insist on our sharing with the garrison under their command, in what little stock of provisions they had remaining.

We agreed to accept the liberality of these hospitable strangers with the best grace we could; but, on condition, that we might be made acquainted with the price of the articles we were to be supplied with; and that Captain Clerke should give bills to the amount upon the Victualling-office in London. This the Major positively refused; and whenever it was afterwards urged, stopped us short, by telling us, he was certain that he could not oblige his mistress more, than in giving

every assistance in his power to her good friends and allies the English.

In return for such singular generosity, we had little to bestow but our admiration and our thanks. Fortunately, however, Captain Clerke had sent by me a set of prints and maps, belonging to the last voyage of Captain Cook, which he desired me to present in his name to the commander; who, being an enthusiast in every thing relating to discoveries, received it with a satisfaction which shewed that, though a trifle, nothing could have been more acceptable. Captain Clerke had likewise entrusted me with a discretionary power of shewing him a chart of the discoveries made in the present voyage; and as I judged, that a person in his situation, and of his turn of mind, would be exceedingly gratified by a communication of this sort, I made no scruple to repose in him a confidence, of which his whole conduct shewed him to be deserving.

The next morning we applied privately to the merchant Fedositsch, to purchase some tobacco for the sailors, who had been upwards of a twelvemonth without this favourite commodity. However, this, like all our other transactions of the same kind, came immediately to the Major's knowledge; and we were soon after surprised to find in our house, four bags of tobacco, weighing upwards of a hundred pounds each, which he begged might be presented in the name of himself, and the garrison under his command, to our sailors. At the same time, they had sent us twenty loaves of fine sugar, and as many pounds of tea, being articles they understood we were in great want of, which they begged to be indulged in presenting to the officers. Along with these, Madame Behm had also sent a present for Captain Clerke, consisting of fresh butter, honey, figs, rice, and some other little things of the same kind, attended with many wishes, that in his infirm state of health, they might be of service to him. It was in vain we tried to oppose this profusion of bounty, which I was really anxious to restrain, being

convinced that they were giving away, not a share, but almost the whole stock of the garrison.

As our journey to Bolcheretsk had taken up more time than we expected, and were told that our return might prove still more difficult and tedious, we were under the necessity of acquainting the commander this evening, with our intention of setting out the next day. We were most agreeably surprised, when the Major told us, that if we could stay one day longer, he would accompany us; as he should feel great pleasure in returning with us to St. Peter and St. Paul, that he might himself be a witness of every thing done for us, that it was in their power to do.

The next morning, being fixed for our departure, we retired early to our lodgings, where the first things we saw were three travelling dresses, made after the fashion of the country, which the Major had provided for us. Indeed, what with his liberal presents, and the kindness of Captain Shamaleff, and many other individuals, who all begged to throw in their mite, together with the ample stock of provisions he had sent us for our journey, we had amassed no inconsiderable load of baggage.

When Major Behm arrived, he was saluted with thirteen guns, and received with every other mark of distinction that it was in our power to pay him. After visiting Captain Clerke, and taking a view of both the ships, he returned to dinner on board the Resolution; and, in the afternoon, the various curiosities we had collected in the course of our voyage were shewn him, and a complete assortment of every article presented to him by the Captain. On this occasion I must not pass over an instance of great generosity and gratitude in the sailors of both ships; who, when they were told of the handsome present of tobacco that was made them by the Major, desired, entirely of their own accord, that their grog might be stopped, and their allowance of spirits presented, on their part, to the garrison of Bolcheretsk. We could not but admire so extraordinary a sacrifice; and that they might not suffer by it, Captain

Clerke, and the rest of the officers, substituted, in the room of the very small quantity the major could be prevailed on to accept, the same quantity of rum. This, with a dozen or two of Cape wine, for Madame Behm, and such other little presents as were in our power to bestow, were accepted in the most obliging manner.

Major Behm having resigned the command of Kamtschatka, intended to have set out in a short time for Petersburg; and he now offered to charge himself with any dispatches we might trust to his care. This was an opportunity not to be neglected; and Captain Clerke, being persuaded that the whole account of our discoveries might safely be trusted to a person who had given such striking proofs both of his public and private virtue, and considering that we had a very hazardous part of the voyage still to undertake, determined to send by him, the whole of the journal of our late commander, with that part of his own which completed the period from Captain Cook's death till our arrival at Kamtschatka, together with a chart of all our discoveries, to be delivered to our ambassador at the Russian court. During the three following days, the Major was entertained alternately in the two ships, in the best manner we were able. On the 25th he took his leave, and was saluted with thirteen guns; and the sailors, at their own desire, gave him three cheers.

During the time that the ships lay in the harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul, Captain Clerke's health continued daily to decline, notwithstanding the salutary change of diet which the country of Kamtschatka afforded him. On the 1st of June, we got on board nine thousand pounds weight of rye flour, with which we were supplied from the stores of St. Peter and St. Paul; and the Discovery had a proportional quantity. The men were immediately put on full allowance of bread, which they had not been indulged in since our leaving the Cape of Good Hope.

On the 6th, twenty head of cattle, of a moderate size, were sent us by the commander's orders from the Verchni Oserog, which is near a hundred miles from

this place in a direct line. They arrived in good condition. The eight following days were employed in making ready for sea.

At noon, on the 6th of July, we passed a considerable number of large masses of ice; and, observing that it still adhered, in several places, to the shore on the continent of Asia, we were not much surprised to fall in, at three in the afternoon, with an extensive body of it, stretching away to the westward. This sight gave great discouragement to our hopes of advancing much farther northward this year than we had the preceding. We had sailed, by the 9th, near forty leagues to the westward, along the edge of the ice, without seeing any opening, or a clear sea to the northward beyond it, and had therefore no prospect of advancing farther north for the present.

It being now found impossible beyond a doubt, that any north-east passage could be discovered, owing to the solid fields of ice which every where environed them, it was determined to give up all idea of such a futile scheme: and Captain Clerke, whose health was so fast on the decline that he could not leave his bed, gave orders to return to Awatska Bay with all possible speed: but before we could arrive there, on the 22d of August, 1779, at nine o'clock in the morning, he departed this life, in the thirty-eighth year of his age. He died of a consumption, which had evidently commenced before he left England, and of which he had lingered during the whole voyage. His very gradual decay had long made him a melancholy object to his friends; yet the equanimity with which he bore it, the constant flow of good spirits, which continued to the last hour, and a cheerful resignation to his fate, afforded them some consolation. It was impossible not to feel a more than common degree of compassion for a person, whose whole life had been a continued scene of those difficulties and hardships, to which a seaman's occupation is subject, and under which he at last sunk.

Next day we anchored in the harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul, when our old friend, the sergeant, who

was still the commander of the place, came on board with a present of berries, intended for our poor deceased captain. He was exceedingly affected when we told him of his death, and shewed him the coffin that contained his body. He signified his intention of sending off an express to the commander of Bolcheretsk, to acquaint him with our arrival; and Captain Gore availed himself of that occasion of writing him a letter, in which he requested that sixteen head of black cattle might be sent with all possible expedition.

In the morning of the 25th, Captain Gore made out the new commissions, in consequence of Captain Clerke's death; appointing himself to the command of the Resolution; and me to the command of the Discovery; and Mr. Lanyan, master's mate of the Resolution, who had served in that capacity on board the Adventure in the former voyage, was promoted to the vacant lieutenancy. These promotions produced several other arrangements of course. The artificers were now busily employed in the necessary repairs.

On Sunday afternoon, August the 29th, we paid the last offices to Captain Clerke. The officers and men of both ships walked in procession to the grave, whilst the ships fired minute guns; and the service being ended, the marines fired three vollies. He was interred under a tree, which stands on a rising ground, in the valley to the north side of the harbour, where the hospital and store-houses are situated. All the Russians in the garrison were assembled, and attended with great respect and solemnity.

The next day an ensign arrived from Bolcheretsk, with a letter from the commander to Captain Gore; by which we understood, that orders had been given about the cattle; and that they might be expected here in a few days; and moreover, that Captain Shamaleff, the present commander, would himself pay us a visit immediately on the arrival of a sloop which was daily expected from Okotsk.

The 22d, being the anniversary of his Majesty's coronation, twenty-one guns were fired, and the hand-

somest feast our situation would allow of, was prepared in honour of the day. As we were sitting down to dinner, the arrival of Captain Shamaleff was announced. He acquainted us, that our not having received the sixteen head of black cattle, we had desired might be sent down, was owing to the very heavy rains at Verchnei, which had prevented their setting out. Specimens of all our curiosities were presented to him; and Captain Gore added to them a gold watch and a fowling-piece. Next morning he took his leave.

The next day I set on foot a small hunting party, and put myself under the direction of the clerk of the parish, who was a celebrated bear-hunter. We arrived by sun-set at the side of one of the larger lakes. The next step was to conceal ourselves as much as possible; and this we were able to do very effectually among some long grass and brush-wood, that grew close to the water's edge. We had not lain long in ambush, before we had the pleasure to hear the growlings of bears in different parts round about us; and our expectations were soon gratified by the sight of one of them in the water, which seemed to be swimming directly to the place where we lay hid. The moon at this time gave a considerable light; and when the animal had advanced about fifteen yards, three of us fired at it pretty nearly at the same time. The beast immediately turned short on one side, and made a noise which could not properly be called roaring, nor growling, nor yelling, but was a mixture of all three, and horrible beyond description. It retreated to some thick bushes, at a little distance, and continued to make the same terrible noise; and though the Kamtschadales were persuaded it was mortally wounded, they thought it most advisable not to rouse it again for the present. It was at this time past nine o'clock, and the night threatening a change of weather, we returned home, and deferred the gratification of our curiosity till morning, when we found the bear dead in the place to which it had been watched. It proved to be a female, and beyond the common size.

No occurrence worth mentioning took place till the 30th, when Captain Gore went to Paratounca, to put up, in the church there, an escutcheon, prepared by Mr. Webber, with an inscription upon it, setting forth Captain Clerke's age and rank, and the object of the expedition in which he was engaged at the time of his decease. We also affixed to the tree, under which he was buried, a board, with an inscription upon it to the same effect.

On the 2d of October, both ships warped out of the harbour, the day before the cattle arrived from Verchnei; and that the men might receive the full benefit of this much longed-for supply, by consuming it fresh, Captain Gore came to a determination of staying five or six days longer. At four in the afternoon of the 9th, we unmoored; and now took our leave of this place.

After experiencing very blowing weather and adverse winds, which put us out of the course originally intended, at day-break of the 26th, we had the pleasure of descriing high land to the westward, which proved to be Japan. On the 29th, at nine o'clock, the wind shifting to the southward, and the sky lowering, we tacked, and stood off to the east, and soon after saw a vessel close in with the land, standing along the shore to the northward; and another in the offing, coming down on us before the wind. Objects of any kind, belonging to a country so famous, and yet so little known, it will be easily conceived, must have excited a general curiosity, and accordingly every soul on board was upon deck, in an instant, to gaze at them. As the vessel to windward approached us, she hauled farther off shore; upon which, fearing that we should alarm them by the appearance of a pursuit, we brought the ships to, and she passed ahead of us, at the distance of about half a mile. It would have been easy for us to have spoken with them; but perceiving, by their manœuvres, that they were much frightened, Captain Gore was not willing to augment their terrors; and thinking that we should have many better opportunities of communica-

tion with this people, suffered them to go off without interruption.

From the 29th of October to the 5th of November, we continued our course to the south-east, having very unsettled weather, attended with much lightning and rain. On both days we passed great quantities of pumice-stone, several pieces of which we took up, and found to weigh from one ounce to three pounds. We conjectured that these stones had been thrown into the sea by eruptions of various dates, as many of them were covered with barnacles, and others quite bare.

On the 15th, we saw three islands, and bore away for the south point of the largest, upon which we observed a high barren hill, flattish at the top, and when seen from the west south-west, presents an evident volcanic crater. The earth, rock, or sand, for it was not easy to distinguish of which its surface is composed, exhibited various colours, and a considerable part we conjectured to be sulphur, both from its appearance to the eye, and the strong sulphureous smell which we perceived as we approached the point. Some of the officers on board the *Resolution*, which passed nearer the land, thought they saw steams rising from the top of the hill. From these circumstances, Captain Gore gave it the name of *Sulphur Island*. In the morning of the 30th, we ran along the Lema Isles. At nine o'clock, a Chinese boat, which had been before with the *Resolution*, came along-side, and wanted to put on board us a pilot, which, however, we declined, as it was our business to follow our consort.

At two in the afternoon, on the 13th, having got under sail, the *Resolution* saluted the fort of Macao with eleven guns, which was returned with the same number. In the morning of the 20th, we steered for Pulo Condore; and at half past twelve we got sight of the island. As soon as we were come to anchor, Captain Gore fired a gun, with a view of apprizing the natives of our arrival, and drawing them towards the shore, but without effect. Early in the morning of the 21st, parties were sent to cut wood, which was Captain Gore's principal motive for coming hither.

None of the natives having yet made their appearance, notwithstanding a second gun had been fired, Captain Gore thought it adviseable to land, and go in search of them. We proceeded through a thick wood, up a steep hill, to the distance of a mile, when, after descending, we arrived at some huts. I ordered the party to stay without, lest the sight of so many armed men should terrify the inhabitants, whilst I entered and reconnoitred alone. I found in one of the huts an elderly man, who was in a great fright, and preparing to make off with his most valuable effects. However, a few signs, particularly that most significant one of holding out a handful of dollars, and then pointing to a herd of buffaloes, and the fowls that were running about the huts in great numbers, left him without any doubts as to the objects of our visit. He pointed towards a place where the town stood, and made us comprehend that, by going thither, all our wants would be supplied. He ordered a young man to conduct us to the town, as soon as an obstacle should be removed, of which we were not aware.

We were now conducted to the town, which consists of between twenty and thirty houses, built close together. By means of my money, and pointing at different objects in sight, I had no difficulty in making a man, who seemed to be the principal person of the company to which we were introduced, comprehend the main business of our errand; and I as readily understood from him, that the chief or captain was absent, but would soon return; and that without his consent, no purchases of any kind could be made.

Having at last procured a supply of buffaloes, and some fat hogs, on the 28th of January, 1780, we unmoored; and, as soon as we were clear of the harbour, steered south south-west. On the 2d of February, at eight in the morning, we tried for soundings, continuing to do the same every hour, till we had passed the Straits of Sunda, and found the bottom with twenty-three fathoms of line.

In the morning of the 9th, I received orders from Captain Gore to make sail towards a Dutch ship, which now hove in sight to the southward, and which we supposed to be from Europe; and, according to the nature of the intelligence we could procure from her, either to join him at Cracatoa, where he intended to stop, for the purpose of supplying the ships with arrack, or to proceed to the south-east end of Prince's Island, and there take in our water, and wait for him.

I accordingly bore down towards the Dutch ship, which soon after came to an anchor to the eastward; and having got as near her as the tide would permit, we also dropt anchor. Next morning Mr. Williamson got on board the ship, and learnt that she had been seven months from Europe, and three from the Cape of Good Hope; that, before she sailed, France and Spain had declared war against Great Britain; and that she left Sir Edward Hughes, with a squadron of men of war, and a fleet of East India ships, at the Cape. I immediately sent a boat to acquaint Captain Gore with the intelligence we had received.

At three o'clock in the morning of the 12th, we stood over for Prince's Island, and came to an anchor within half a mile of the shore. Lieutenant Lanyon, who had been here before with Captain Cook in the year 1770, was sent along with the master to look for the watering-place. The natives, who came to us soon after we anchored, brought a plentiful supply of large fowls, and some turtles; but the last, for the most part, were very small.

On the 19th, being favoured by a breeze from the north-west, we broke ground, and the next day had entirely lost sight of this place. Of this island I shall only observe, that we were exceedingly struck with the great general resemblance of the natives, both in figure, colour, manners, and even language, to the nations we had been so much conversant with in the South Seas.

It had hitherto been Captain Gore's intention to proceed directly to St. Helena, without stopping at the Cape; but the rudder of the Resolution having been reported to be in a dangerous state, he resolved to steer

immediately for the Cape, as the most eligible place both for the recovery of the sick, and for the repair of the rudder. In the forenoon of the 10th of April, a snow was seen bearing down to us, which proved to be an English East India packet that had left Table Bay three days before, and was cruising with orders for the China fleet, and other India ships.

The next morning we stood into Simon's Bay. We found lying here the Nassau and Southampton East Indiamen, waiting for convoy for Europe. The Resolution saluted the fort with eleven guns, and the same number was returned. Mr. Brandt, the governor of this place, came to visit us as soon as we had anchored. He appeared much surprised to see our crew in so healthy a condition, as the Dutch ship, that had left Macao on our arrival there, and had touched at the Cape some time before, reported that we were in a most wretched state, having only fourteen hands left on board the Resolution, and seven on board the Discovery. It is not easy to conceive the motive these people could have had for propagating so wanton and malicious a falsehood. During our stay at the Cape, we met with every proof of the most friendly disposition towards us, both in the governor and principal persons of the place, as well Africans as Europeans.

Having completed our victualling, and furnished ourselves with the necessary supply of naval stores, we sailed out of the bay on the 9th of May. On the 12th of June, we passed the equator for the fourth time during this voyage. On the 12th of August, we made the western coast of Ireland; and, after a fruitless attempt to get into Port Galway, from whence it was Captain Gore's intention to have sent the journals and maps of our voyage to London, we were obliged, by strong southerly winds, to steer to the northward. On the 22d of August, at eleven in the morning, both ships came to an anchor at Stromness; and on the 4th day of October the ships arrived safe at the Nore, after an absence of four years, two months, and twenty-four days.

[T. Maiden, Sherbourn-Lane.

FINIS.

place
pair of
April, a
to be
le Bay
for the

We
East
Reso-
same
rnor of
chored.
in so
ad left
at the
re in a
ds left
Disco-
e peo-
d ma-
e, we
osition
ersons

d our-
ve sail-
2th of
during
de the
tempt
Captain
naps of
strong
he 22d
ame to
of Oc-
an ab-
r days.
-Lane.